

*Della Lingua Toscana-Romana.*  
OR, AN *BB. 4.56*  
INTRODUCTION  
TO THE  
*ITALIAN TONGUE.*

CONTAINING  
Such grounds as are most im-  
mediately useful, and necessary for the  
speedy and easie attaining of the same.

AS ALSO  
A new Store House of proper and choice  
**DIALOGUES**

MOST  
Useful for such as desire the speaking part, and  
intend to travel into *Italy*, or the *Levant*.

*Together with*  
The Modern way of addressing Letters, and stiling of per-  
sons, as well in actual Discourse, as in Writing.

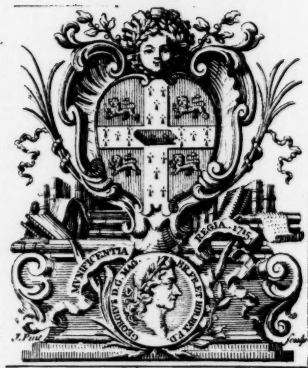
---

By **GIO: TORRIANO.**  
An Italian, & Professor of the Italian Tongue in London.

---

**L O N D O N :**  
Printed for *J. Martin*, and *J. Allestrye*, and are to be  
sold at their shop at the sign of the Bell in *S. Pauls Church-*  
yard. 1657.

0  
w



488115

71-1708



# *L' Epistola*



*Alli Signori dell' Honoratissima  
Nazione Inglese già miei  
Scolari, e sempre mai Patro-  
ni Osservandissimi.*

**D**Ovendosi mandare  
alle stampe questa  
mia operetta, in ser-  
vitio e prò di quei  
tali che fossero affettionati alla

*Dedicatora.*

Lingua per non dire all' istessa  
Nazione Italiana, e volendo  
appoggiarla all' autorità di tali  
Personaggi, e Soggetti cospicui  
che poteffero e voleffero non  
pure approuvarla, ma occor-  
rendo anche proteggerla dalla  
male-dicenza di chi si fosse,  
che ne volesse sparare, hò sti-  
mato che non farebbe fuor di  
proposito, anzi necessario d'  
appoggiarla à lor' altri Signori  
che di già hanno vista e forsi  
anche rivista L'Italia, e che  
non solo m' hanno conosciuto  
ma etiandio praticato per la  
Lingua

## *L' Epistola*

Lingua nella Metropoli di  
essa; però la dono alle Sig-  
norie loro con speranza, che  
venga gradita con quell' af-  
fetto che hora vien loro de-  
dicata, se non havrò azzec-  
cato, e colpito nel segno in  
tutto e per tutto, almeno  
mediante questa operetta  
havrò ricordato non solo a  
loro, ma insieme á tutta l'  
Honoratissima Nazione In-  
glese l' antica e divota mia  
servitù; E per fine sup-  
plico le Signorie loro di non  
volere isdegnarne il patroci-  
nio

*Dedicatoria.*

nio mentre mi dico per sem-  
pre,

*Delle Signorie loro 'diuotissimo  
e perpetuo Servitore.*

Gio Torriano.

---



To all such whom the following Introduction may any ways concern.



Having found by experience since I first publish'd a Grammar according to the usual method, that a great part, I may say, the major part of those to whom I have had occasion to read, have affected a kinde of a rote-way of learning, rather than the strict Grammatical way; some possibly, because they had not the Latine Tongue, or so forgot it, as that the terms of Grammar were rather stops & remora's than

To the Reader.

than furtherances unto them; others  
out of a kinde of humor or aversion,  
crying down the Grammatical way as  
Pedantical and School-boy-like, intend-  
ing to be taught as the French use to say,  
*Ala Cavalliere*, I thought it not amiss to  
contrive a way that might comply with  
such genius's, as I have intimated,  
whose number is not small, nor yet  
the persons inconsiderable; and the ra-  
ther likewise, since of late years several  
Ladies of qualitie, have been pleased  
to revive and put again into *vogue* the  
Italian Tongue, which hath lain dor-  
mant, if not dead, with that noble  
Sex, any time since *Queen Annes* days:  
Wherefore that such persons of quali-  
ty so affected, might not be disheart-  
ned by the difficulties which usually  
appear at the beginning or entrance  
into

*To the Reader.*

into the Language, I have chiefly for their sakes accommodated the first part of this Introduction, intending to insinuate the Language, by concealing the terms of Grammar, so that the Thorns being put by, the Rose may be safely pluck'd, without prejudice to their delicate hands, or tender fingers: And specially among the Verbs, I have endeavored it most, removing the Latine denominations of the several Moods and Tenses; and for order and memories sake, I have distinguished them by figures, giving the English interpretation unto them, supposing that if the Moods and Tenses be understood in English by the Learner, the same may likewise be understood in Italian, though not exprest; if not understood but onely by rote, then they

*To the Reader.*

they would not be understood in Italian though exprest, without a great deal of pains and trouble. In fine, in all the parts of Speech all along, I have endeavored that nothing be presented to the eye, but what might be soon and easily look'd over, and consequently committed to the memory, than which there is nothing more necessary for the attaining of a Language.

The second part I have fitted for such who are not so tender fingered, but may endure to pluck the Rose, notwithstanding the Thorns. But as for such as are strict, and rigid Latine Scholars, as they call them, I conceive the Grammar way be best for them, for as much as the terms unto them are easie and familiar, and will  
further



To the Reader.

further them much; and Grammars that interpret Italian by the Latine, are most proper; if they be to be had, but I presume though, that this Introduction may save even them some labour, and they may pick out their interest hence, if they will descend to an impartial perusal of the same.

Now for such as affect the speaking part, I have composed the Dialogues, wherein as I have ever aimed, so chiefly now have I endeavored at the Propriety of the Language, as it is spoken in the best parts of *Italy*, which will easily appear unto them who have any insight into the Italian Tongue, and specially unto those who have made a considerable stay in the best parts of *Italy*; as those noble Patrons of mine  
to

To the Reader.

to whom I have intended the foregoing Italian Epistle by way of Dedication and Appeal, who have been my Scholars in *Italy*, whose names indeed I would have particularly set down (lest I might be thought an Impostor) had I been so good a Herald as to have known their several Titles and Dignities, that I might not have mistaken in the Precedencies, many of them being persons of Honour, and all of them of considerable worth and vertue. I intend it not as a Dedication to any other, but to such as will own me in the relation I had to them.

For my Dialogues, it may be objected, that I have not Englished them neer enough to the letter and word,  
as

*To the Reader.*

as young beginners would possibly expect. I answer that I thought it most fitting to render Phrase for Phrase, and Propriety for Propriety, than otherwise, by reason that they might not seem too heavy, and too dull (as they would necessarily prove, if they were rendred verbatim) and so prejudicate the life of application, which is chiefly discerned, in my opinion in the phrase, rather than in the literal interpretation; but Labour and Constancy will overcome any difficulty.

I will not urge the benefit that may be had by these endeavours of mine, referring that to event; but to conclude, this much I shall say, that as this piece hath its reception, so I shall

*To the Reader.*

shall be the better encouraged to proceed in some other pieces which are on the Loom, which tend to the accomplishment of the Italian Tongue, in relation to the English Nation.

---

---

pro-  
are  
ac-  
gue,

The manner of pronouncing the Alphabet, as to the nomination of the single letters, comorehending even those which are not in use, yet necessary to be nominated according to the *Romans* and *Thuscans*.

	R		T
A	A		A
B	be		bi
C	ce		ci
D	de		di
E	e		e
F	ef		ef
G	ge		gi
H	ah		acca
I	I		I
K	Kappa	OR	Chappa
L	el		el
M	em		em
N	en		en
O	o		o
P	pe		pi
Q	qu		qu
R	er		er
S	es		es
T	te		ti
U	u		u
X	ix		Iccase
Y	Ypsilon, y greca, fio.		Iffilon
Z	Zeta.		Zeta

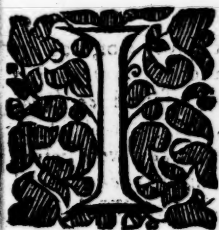
Such as have not the benefit of a Master, must peruse the following observations, before they pronounce this well.

the  
the  
hose  
omi-



## The Italian Letters are 20.

A b c d e f g h i l m n o p q r s t u x.



Nstead of *x.* we use single or double *s.* or *c.* saying *Alessandro* not *Alexandro*, *Serje* not *Xerxa*, *eccitare*, not *excitare*, but *Xarro*, a mans name, is written with an *x.* to distinguish it from *santo* holy.

A.

- Is founded broad; as in the English word, pawn, *pance* bread; sound *panne*.

C.

Before *a. o. u.* is founded as English *K.* Before *e. i.* or *i.* as English *ch.* as in the words cherry. children, *cena*. a supper, sound *chena*, *città*, sound *chittà*; a City; *ch.* is alwaies pronounced as *k.* in English. and if *c.* come double before the (*h.*) or before *a, o, u.* sound them smartly; *specchi* : looking glasses, *vacca*

B

cruse the  
is well.

An introduction

a Cow, *stracco* weary, sound *spekky, vakka, strakko*, but if before *e* or *i*, the first *e*, must have a touch of *a*. *eccettuare*, sound *eichettuare*, to except, *stracci*, sound *stratchi*, rags.

E.

**S**ometimes is pronounc'd open; *fièle* gall, as in the English word, *mealy*, sometimes close *bello* fair, sound as in the English word, *mellow*. The pronounciation of these is best gotten by the ear.

G.

**B**efore, *a, o, u*, as in English, but before *e*, or *i*, as an English *j* consonant, *gènero*, a son in law, sound *jénero*, *girándola*, a circle, or fire work, sound *jeirándola*. If it come between two vowels, the latter of which is either, *e*, or *i*, it is pronounc'd as if a (*d*) were before it, *vigilante*, sound *vidgilante*, watchfull, *regente*, sound *redgente*, regent, or in government, as in the English words, *wedge* or *ridge*.

If it come double before *a, o, u*, the same as in English, onely a little stronger, and if double before *e* or *i*, the same as when single before *e*, or *i*, onely forcing of it a little more, as in the words, *legge*, *luiggi*, sound *ledge*, *luidgi*.

If (*h*) come between *g*, and *i*, or *g*, and *e*, then *g*, is pronounc'd as *gue*, or, *gui*, in English, in the words *guest*, or, *guide*, *botteghe* shops, sound *bottegne*, *luoghi*, places sound, *logui*.

If it come before *l*, then it is melted into another, *l. figlio*, sound, *fillio*, except in these words, *Inglese* *glóbo*



*gioco, negligenza, negletto, conglutinare*, where the sound is the same as in English.

If it come before *n*, it is melted as it were into another *n*, and as if an *(i)* should follow the latter, *regno*, sound *rénno*.

The English words, *onion*, and, *companion*, will humour this pronounciation.

*Gua, gue, gui*, are sounded as *gwa, gwe, gwi*, *guastare* to spoyl, sound *gwastare*, *guercio* blear eyed, sound *gwercio*, *guida* a guide, sound, *gwida*.

## H.

**I**N it self is no Letter, but rather a note of distinction to avoid equivocation, as appears in, *ci, us*, from *chi*, who? *ce, us*, from, *che*, which, *anno*, a year, from, *hanno*, they have.

*'Ai*, to the, from, *hai*, thou hast, *á*, to, from, *há*, he hath.

*'Amo*, I love, from *hámo*, a fish hook.

*Giaccio*, I lye down, from, *ghiaccio*, ice. *véggia* a vessel, from *végghia*, a watching.

## I.

**I**S sounded as English *ee*. *mínimo*, the least, sound *meénimo*. It is never used as a consonant; but instead of it, *g*, is put before it, saying, *Giovánni*, John, not *Jovánni*, *Gioséppe*, Joseph, not *Joséppe*.

O.

Sometimes is pronounc'd open, as, *tórre*, to take a-  
Sway, sound as in the English word, *torrent*, some-  
times close, as *tórre*, a tower, as in the English word  
*turett*, or near upon that sound.

The generall observations of the close (o) are these  
that follow.

1. Where (ò) is accented it is close as, *amò* he loved.

2. Words ending in *òne*, *óra*, *óre*, *óro*, *óso*, *oratióne*,  
prayer, *qualhóra*, sometimes, *signóre*, Lord, or Sir, *co-  
lóro* those, *amoróso* amorous, except when *u.* goes  
before, as *buóno* good, then it is pronounc'd as in the  
English word, bone, *cuóre*, a heart, as in the English  
word; kore, of fruit.

3. If it come before *l. m. n. r.* it is close, *cólmo* top  
full; *Róma*, Rome, *pónta*, a point, *téndo* round, except  
when *i.* or *u.* comes before it, as *chióma* a head of hair,  
*duómo* a Cathedral Church.

4. If it come before *gn.* it is close, as *Balógna*, sound  
*bolúnnia*, by these may be gueſt any other observation  
of the close (o.) And where it doth not come within  
the compaſs of theſe observations it is to be ſounded  
open.

Q.

I Sever pronounc'd as English, *q.* and when (c)  
goes before it, it is pronounc'd ſmartly, *piácque*  
it pleaſed, *acqua* water, ſound *piackwe*, *Ackwa*.

**C**oming between two vowels is sounded like an  
(z) *mifero*, sound *mizero*, miserable, *desio*, sound  
*dézio* a desire, except *così* so, *aliresi*, also, and all words  
that have (fi) added to them as, *scrivesi* it is written,  
where its sound is naturall. See or *sci* pronounc'd as, *sh*,  
*scelta* choice, sound *shelta*, *scintilla*, a spark, sound  
*shintilla*. Before c. f. p. t. it is pronounc'd also in its  
naturall sound as, *scala* a ladder or pair of staires,  
*sfacciato* brazen fac'd, *véspe*, a waspe, *stúdio*, a study or  
Vniversity, But before d. g. l. m. n. r. u. as z. as  
*sbàrra*, a fence, *sdégno* disdain, *sguàrdo* a look,  
*stattare* to weane, *smània* madness, frowardness, *sno-  
dàre* to untye, *fradicàre* to pluck up by the roots, *sven-  
turàta* misfortunate.

T.

**W**ords that have *tia*, *tie*, or *tio*, *tii*, in the middle  
or ending, are pronounc'd as *ts*, as *grátia* sound  
*grátsia*, grace, *grátie*, sound *grátsie*, graces, *ótio*, *ótio*  
idleness, *vitii*, *vitii* vices, except *ambastia* an Extasie,  
*saettia* a pinnace, *malatia*, a sickness, *questiòne* a que-  
stion, *quistiòne* a quarrel, *moléstia*, trouble, s. following  
t: *tiene* he holdeth, *potiàte* ye may be able, *patiàmo*,  
we may suffer, *patiàte*, ye may suffer, and some other  
verbs, which use will discover.

U.

**S**ound as, oo, in English, *luna* sound, *loóna*, the moon,  
and when it is a consonant, then it ought to be  
character'd thus, v. and is pronounc'd as in English,  
*vitio*, *virtù*, vice, vertue.

Z. When

## Z.

**W**Hen it comes single betwixt two vowels, is pronounc'd as if a (*d*) were before it, *mézo*, sound *medzo* the midle, *azúro* sound *adzúro* blew.

If it come double between two vowels then it is pronounc'd as, *ts. bellézza* sound, *bellétsa* beauty.

If it come after *l. n. r.* it is also sounded as (*ts.*) *mílza*, sound *miltfa*, the spleen, *ronzino* sound *rontsino* a Nag, *fórza* sound *farfsa* strength,

Divers words that begin with *z.* are pronounc'd with the sound of *ts.* others with *ds.* as *zío* sound *tsío*, an uncle, *zóppo*, sound, *tsoppo*, lame, *zéro*, sound *dséro* the figure of nought in Arithmetick.

The letters *b. d. f. l. m. n. p. r.* are pronounc'd as in the English; in stead of *k.* we use *ch.* in stead of *ph. f.*

And thus much for Pronunciation, which being observed, with the Accents, there will be no difficulty in pronouncing the language, for generally the Italian tongue is pronounc'd as it is written, and written as it is pronounc'd, without loosing any letter or Syllable.

Most

Most of the examples are here Printed a part, to be examined after they have been perused at large.

<b>C</b> éna	amoroso
città	cólmo
póche	Róma
póchi	pónta
spécchi	rónda
eccettuàre	Belógna
stracci	piacque
fiéle	mísero
béllò	scélta
género	scintilla
girándola	scála
vigilánte	sfórzo
regénte	véspa
légge	stúdio
luiggi	grátia
bottegha	grátia
luóghi	otie
figlio	vítii
régno	lúna
guastàre	virtù
guercio	mézo
guída	bellezza
hanno	míza
mínimo	ronzino
giovánni	fórza
tórre	zío
amò	zéro
oratióne	
qualhóra	
signóre	

*An introduction*

All our words, for the most part end in vowels; *25*  
*ánima* the soul, *féde* faith, or trust, *Luiggi*, Lewis, *cór-*  
*po*, a body, *virtù* vertue.

Yet observe that *E.* or *O.* are not pronounc'd when they follow *l. n. r.* and often not exprest in writing, nor sometimes when they follow *t. d.* or *m.* as for example.

*Mo. habbiám hormai finitq* We have at last made an end - not *habbiámo*

*Le. Un mal non vien sólo* A mischief comes not alone, not, *male*

*Lo. Bel tempo fá* It is fair weather, not *Bélla*

*Ne. Per ragión di státq* Out of State Policy not *raggióne*

*No. Di buon ingégno* Of a good wit not, *Buóno*

*Re. Muor di vóglia* He dies with longing, not *Muóre*

*Ro. Il ver Odiáto* The truth hated, not *Véro*

*Te. Frá. Bernárdo* Brother Bernard, for, *Fráté*

*De. Gran Soggetto* An eminent man, not *Gránde*

*To. San Piétro.* Saint Peter, not *Sánta.*

But if they end the sentence, they are written at length.

These words of one syllable end in consonants.

<i>Il</i>	<i>non</i>	<i>in</i>	<i>con</i>	<i>per</i>	<i>fuor</i>	<i>et. ed.</i>
the	not	in	with	for	out	and

Observe that these words are never abbreviated,

<i>Apóllo</i>	the God Apollo.
<i>Chiara</i>	clear.
<i>Dúro</i>	hard.
<i>Oscúra</i>	obscure.
<i>Cóllo</i>	a neck.
<i>Affánnà</i>	sorrow.
<i>Stránò</i>	strange.
<i>Sostégna</i>	a prop.
<i>Vólo</i>	a flight or foring.
<i>Ingánnò</i>	deceit.
<i>Pólo</i>	the Polestarre.
<i>Animo</i>	the mind.
<i>Abisso</i>	a bottomlesse pit.
<i>Péño</i>	a pawn.
<i>Régno</i>	a Kingdome.
<i>Hóra</i>	an hour.
<i>Nólo</i>	fraught or hier.
<i>Léño</i>	timber.

For it were absurd to say, *Apól síede nel trónò*. Apollo sitteth in the thronie, but *Apóllo síede*, &c. and so of the rest.

The following particles are usually contracted if the word following begin with a vowell.

*La. le. lo. di. mi. ti. si. ci. ne. vi.*  
*L'ánima è immortále.* The soul is immortall for, *la anima*, &c.

*L'etérne pene*, the eternall pains, for, *le etérne*, &c.

*L'a*

*L'amóre acciecal' áximo.* Love blinds the mind, for *lo amóre*, &c.

*Egli è l'usanza d'imitar altrui.* It is the fashion to imitate another, for, *dì imitáre*, &c.

*M'inténdi?* Do'st understand me, for, *mi inténdi?*

*T'inténdo*, I understand thee, for, *ti inténdo*.

*S'inténde*, its understood, for, *si inténde*.

*L'emulatióne c'incita*, emulation stirreth us, for, *cì incita*.

*Me n'andrò*, I will go my ways, for, *me ne andrò*.

*V'impiegai gl'amici.* I employed friends therein, for, *vi impiegai*, &c.

Observe, that, *che*, before a word beginning with, *h*, looseth its *h*.

*Che hábbia*, say, *c'hábbia*, may he have.

*Che hánno*, *c'hánno*, which they have.

As on the contrary it acquires an *h*. namely of words that end in, *ca. co. ga. go.* the word following beginning with a vowel, as

*Anco Jo, anch' Jo*, I also.

*Dica esso, dich' esso*, let him speak.

*Vengo Jo, Vengh' Jo*, I come.

*Salga egli, salgh' egli*, let him come up.

A Table of the most usuall abbreviations or contractions, with their explanations.

*Al*, for, *a il* to the.

*Ai*, *a'*, for, *alli*, to the.

*Bei*, *be'*, for, *bélli*, fair, beautifull.

*Bell' amánte*, for, *bélló amánte*, a fair lover.

*Cb'* for, *che*, that, or which.

*Coi*, *có*, for, *cónli* or *cóngli*, with the.

*Cólla*, for *cónla*, with the.



*Còlle*, for *còtle*, with the.

*D'*, for, *di to*, or of.

*Del*, for *di il*, of the.

*Ei, e'*, for *egli*, he or it.

*E'l*, for *& il*, and it, and the.

*Fra'*, for, *fra li*, among the.

*Fè*, for, *fèce*, he did, or made.

*Fè*, for *fède*, faith.

*Foss' Jo*, for, *fossi J'o*, were I.

*Gl'*, for, *gli*, the.

*Huòmin' da bene*, for *huòmini da bene*, honest men.

*Huòmin' ingràti*, for *huòmini ingràti*, ungratefull men.

*Lo' mperatòre*, for, *lo Imperatòre*, the Emperour.

*Lo' nventòre*, for, *lo inventòre*, the inventor.

*Madòнна*, for *mia dòнна*, my woman : in ordinary compellation, as much as, *goody* or *gammer* in English, but in extraordinary compellation, applyed to the blessed Virgin Mary.

*Me' méglia*, better.

*Me'l*, for *a me il*, to meet it.

*Mie'*, for *mie*, mine.

*Molt' ànni*, for *mòlti ànni*, many years.

*Nel*, for, *in li*, in the.

*Ne'l*, for, *né il*, nor the, or for it.

*No'l*, for, *non il*, not the.

*Nòlle*, for, *non lo*, not the.

*Pel*, for, *per il*, for the, or through the.

*Pel*, for, *per lo*, idem.

*Può*, for *puoi*, thou canst.

*Quai*, for *quàli*, which.

*Quei*, for *quèlli*, those.

*Quana' il*, for *quàndo il*, when the.

*San'* *Antònio*, for *Sànta Antònio*.

*Sue*, for *suo*, his.

*Se*, for *sei*, thou art.

*Se'l*, for, *à se il*, to himself it, or, if it.

*Su'l*, for, *sopra il*, upon the.

*Tra*, for *tra li*, among the.

*Te'l*, for *à te il*, to thee it.

*Tuo*, for *tuo*, thine.

*Tu'l*, for *tu il*, thou it.

*Tra'l*, for, *tra il*, twixt the.

The observation of the contractions follow-  
ing is very usefull, which are of  
a different nature from  
the former.

*Honrévole*, for *honorevole*, honorable.

*Limósina*, for *elemósina*, almes.

*Lisánte*, or *leonfánte*, for *elesánte*, an elephant.

*Lattuário*, for *elettuario*, an electuary.

*Lódola*, for *alódola*, a lark.

*Micidiále*, for *homicidiále*, a murtherer.

*Mirágl.o*, for *ammiráglio*, an Admiral.

*Nimico*, for *inimico*, an enemy.

*Pístola*, for *epístola*, an Epistle.

*Pregáre*, to entreat, for *priegáre*.

*Postéma*, for *apostéma*, an imposthume.

*Rágn.o*, for *arágn.o*, a spider.

*Retággio*, for *heretággio*, an inheritance.

*Ritto*, for *dritto*, upright.

*Róndine*, for *hiróndine*, a swallow.

*Saláta*, for *insaláta*, a sallat.

*Sciutto*, for *asciutto*, dry.

*Séndo*, being; for, *esséndo*.

*Spágna*, for *Ispágna*, Spain.  
*Spedále*, for *hospedále*, an hospitall or spittle.  
*Spedito*, for *ispedito*, given over.  
*Spronáre*, to spur, for *speronáre*.  
*Státe*, for *estáte*, summer.  
*Stánte*, for *istánte*, instant, or moment.  
*Stória*, for *história*, an history or story.  
*Strátto*, for *astrátto*, in an extasy.  
*Stráno*, for *istráno*, strange.  
*Straordinário*, for *istraordinário*, extraordinary.  
*Strólogo*, for *Astrólogo*, an Astronomer.  
*Stroménto*, for *istroménto*, an instrument.  
*Tenénte* for *luógo tenénte*, a Lieutenant.  
*Vangélo*, for *Evangélo*, the Gospel.  
*Vérno*, for *invérno*, winter.

The contracted words above specified are more frequent in discourse; and the words at length, in writings.

The following words in the first place, are used in ancient Authors, those in the second place are only now in use.

*Ambasciata*, an embassy or errand, *mbasciata*.  
*Gráve*, heavy, *gréve*.  
*Láude*, prayse, *lóde*.  
*Sciauráto*, misfortunat, *sciaguráto*.  
*Abnegáre*, to deny, or drown, *annegáre*.  
*Absténere*, to abstain, *asténere*.  
*Bóto*, a vow, *vóto*.  
*Obfuscáre*, to dazell, *offuscáre*.  
*Observáre*, to observe, *osserváre*.  
*Subterránea*, under ground, *sotterránea*.

Láco, a lake, lago.

Luóco, a place, luogo.

Bráccio, an arme, bráccio.

Servidóre, a servant, servidóre.

Admonitióne, admonition, ammonitióne.

Adnoveráre, to number, annoveráre.

Agguagliáre, to equalize, agguagliáre.

Advenire, to happen, avvenire.

Siédo, I sit, séggo.

Síno, be they, or let them be, siano.

Gélo, frost, giélo.

Legáto, bound, ligáto.

Remédio, a remedy, rimédio.

Séte, ye are, siete.

Deféndere, to defend, diféndere.

Inflammáre, to inflame, infiammare.

Drámma, a dramme, drámma.

Dispréggio, misprision, disprezzo.

Avvénga, be it, avvenga.

Scióglio, I loose, sciólgo.

Serviúggia, service, servizio.

Véggio, I see, veggio.

Angiolo, an Angel, Angelo.

Sággio, wife, savio.

Vineghia, Venice, Venétia, Venezza, or Vinezza.

Desidério, desire, disidério.

Débile, weak, debole.

Sembiár, to resemble, sembrare.

Capélli, hair, capéle.

Patiéntia, patience, pazienza.

Cangiár, to change, cambiar.

Constánza, constancy, costanza.

Covéria, a coverlid, coperta.

- Popolo*, people, *pópolo*.  
*Mólto*, much, *mólto*.  
*Sovráno*, Sovereigne, or a trebble, *sopráno*.  
*Obedisco*, I obey, *ubidisco*.  
*Philósopho*, a Philosopher, *Filósofo*.  
*Ótimo*, best, *ótimo*.  
*Psálmo*, a salme, *sálmo*.  
*Témplo*, a Temple, *témpio*.  
*Perfumáto*, perfum'd, *profumáto*.  
*Antíquo*, ancient, *antico*.  
*Consequire*, to achieve, *conseguire*.  
*Muóro*, I die, *muóio*.  
*Peregríno*, a stranger or pilgrim, *pellegrino*.  
*Trafsiáto*, mislead, *travsiáto*.  
*Prétio*, a price, *prézzo*.  
*Vólvo*, I turn, *vólgo*.  
*Casuzza*, a little house, *casuccia*, &c.

And generally observe, that if any particle or word of one syllable be put before any word, the particle assumeth the first letter of the word to which it is put unto; and loseth its own; as *abnegáre* to denye, &c. *b.* is turned into *n.* and we say *annegáre*, and so consequently of others.

For Accents, take these generall Rules.

All words ending in *bio*, *bie*, *bij*, *bio*, *bile*, *bili*, *chia*, *chie*, *chij*, *chio*, *ccia*, *ccie*, *ccij*, *ccio*, *cola*, *cole*, *cali*, *colo*, *gia*, *gie*, *gij*, *gio*, *glia*, *glij*, *glio*, *mia*, *mie*, *mij*, *mio*, *quia*, *quie*, *quij*, *quio*, *scia*, *scie*, *scij*, *scio*, *vola*, *vole*, *voli*, *volo*, have their accents, or more particular sounds in their last

last

last syllables but two, few or none excepted, as *Ráb-bia*, rage, *Gábbie*, cages, *Stábbii*, stables, *hábbio*, I have, *Amábile*, amiable, *Cornáccia*, *Cornáccie*, Dawes, *Corbáccii*, filthy great Ravens, *Copérchia*, a coverlet, *Cavalláccia*, a filthy lade, *Fettuccie*, Ribands, *Capriccii*, whimsies, *Ghiáccio*, Ice, *Agrícola*, a husband man, *Spettácoli*, fights, *Abitácolo*, a dwelling place, *Vanéggia*, fondness, *Vantággii*, advantages, *Disprégio*, contempt, *Móglie*, a wife, *Mógli*, wives, *Raguáglia*, adventures, *Cordóglia*, griefs, *Vendémia*, a Vintage, *Bestémie*, curses, *Domio*, Dominion, *Reliquia*, a Relique, *Esséque*, funerals, *Soliloquii*, Soliloquies, *Oséquio*, obedience, *Móscio*, fairs, *Fávole*, Fables, *Avoli*, Grandfathers, *Diávolo*, a Devil.

Likewise all third persons plurall of all regular verbs, throughout all moods and Tenses, excepting only the future tense; as *Cántano*, they sing, *Gódonó*, they enjoy, *Ricévono*, they receive, *Dórmonó*, they sleep,

Note that some words have their accents on the last syllable, but three, as *Venútofo*, being come his way, *Racommándandomegli*, recommending my self to him, and so have all those verbs in their third person plurall, of the present tense of the Indicative Mood, who in their first person of the said tense, have it on the last syllable saving three, as *Signífico*, I signify *Significano*, they signify, *Dómino*, I rule *Dóminano* they rule.

All words ending in *ána*, *ánza*, *énza*, *óre*, *óre*, *áro*, *áuso*, *émo*, *éso*, *éte*, *gha*, *gna*, *gne*, *llo*, *lla*, *óre*, *óso*, *úto*, *zza*, *zzo*, place their Accent on their last syllables, saving one, as *Campána*, a bell, *Costánza*, Constancy, *Emínénza*, Eminency, *andáre*, to goe, *amáre*, ye love

*Salutato*, saluted, *aplânso*, applause, *suprêmo*, supreme, *intêso*, understood, *vedête*, ye see, *bottêga*, a shop, *Montâgna*, a Mountaine, *Arâgue*, spider's webbs, *Mosciarêllo*, drooping, or flagging, *poverêlla*, a poor woman, *Cantore*, a singer, *pauroso*, fearfull, *Sparûto*, disfigured, *Agûzzo*, sharp, *Bellêzza*, Beauty.

All third persons singular of the first preterperfect tense, of the Indicative Mood, of the first and fourth Conjugations, and of the first and third persons singular of all future tenses, of the Indicative Mood of all Conjugations, have their accents on their last syllables, which ought alwayes to be exprest in writing, as *Amò*, he loved, *Dormì*, he slept, *Amerò*, I will love, *Goderò*, I shall enjoy, *Riderò*, I shall laugh, *Dormirà*, he shall sleep.

These following words ought alwayes to have Accents, exprest upon them.

*Ciò*, that.

*Costì*, there.

*Costà*, thither.

*Dà*, he giveth.

*Dò*, I give.

*Dì*, a day.

*È*, is.

*Eurôpa*, Europe.

*Eufrâte*, Euphrates.

*Fà*, he doth, or makes.

*Fò*, I doe, or make.

*Fù*, hath been.

*Frà*, betwixt, also a contract, or abbreviation, of,

*Frâte*, a Fryer.

*Già*, formerly, or now.

*Giesù*, Iesus.

*Grù*, a crane.

*Giù*, down, below.

*Honestà*, honesty.

*Horsù*, come away.

*Fuggìro*, they fled, for *fuggirone*.

*Là*, there, thither.

*Li*, there, or here.

*Mò*, presently.

*Nè*, neither, or nor.

*Nò*, not.

*ò*, or, *oibò*, fy.

*Però*, therefore, yet.

*Più*, more.

*Piè*, a foot, or feet.

*Podestà*, a Governour.

*Può*, he can, or is able.

*Quà*, hither.

*Qui*, here.

*Re*, a King, or Kings.

*Stà*, he stands, dwells, or is.

*Stò*, I stand, or am, or dwell.

*Sà*, he knows.

*Sè*, himself.

*Sò*, I know.

*Sù*, up.

*Tè*, thee.

*Trà*, betwixt.

*Trè*, three.

*Tò*, for *togli*, take thou, also mark, or observe.

*Tù*, thou.

*Và*, he goeth.



*Vò*, I goe.

*Viè*, } more : pronounc'd all in a sound.

*Vià*, }

*Virtù*, vertue.

Observations of the vowels, how they joyne and sever : the following are pronounc'd all in a sound.

*Fa*, *piatto*, a dish.

*Ie*, *pieno*, full.

*Ii*, *témpii*, Churches.

*Jo*, *piovàno*, a country priest.

*Iu*, *fiùme*, a river.

*Ua*, *quàndo*, when.

*Ue*, *quèlla*, she, or that.

*Ui*, *quìndi*, thence.

*Uo*, *muòre*, he dies, and many more of the same nature.

In the following words, they are pronounc'd severally.

*au*, *paura*, fear.

*eu*, *ricevuto*, receiv'd.

*uo*, *suo*, his or hers.

*oi*, *moine*, flatteries, caresses.

*ia*, *pia*, pious.

*ie*, *dieta*, a diet, or counsell.

*ij*, *pìj*, pious.

*jo*, *mariòlo*, a rogue.

*iu*, *liuto*, a lute.

*ua*, *sua*, hers.

*ue, tûe*, thine *sûe*, his, or hers.  
*ui, sùi*, his.  
*eï, bëi*, thou dost blesse, or thou dost drink,  
*ai, rai*, the rays of the sun.  
*ae, aéreo*, aery.  
*ao, ombrae*, to over-shade.  
*eo, 'Eolo*, the wind Eolus.  
*eu, 'Eufrate*, the river Euphrates.  
*uo, uovo*, an egg.

The following of three vowels are pronounc'd  
all in a sound.

*Paùolo*, Paul.  
*Guaì*, woes.  
*Miei*, mine.  
*Tuoi*, thine.  
*Suoi*, his.  
*Figliuòlo*, a son, or boy.  
*Vèdona*, a widdow.  
*Génova*,  
*Mántova*, } Citties so called,  
*Pádonà*. }

Note, that when *in*, *con*, *per*, or *non*, comes before a word beginning with two consonants, the first whereof is an *S*, the best Italians prefixe & pronounce an *I*, before *S*, as, *non isdegno*, I disdain not, *con istidio*, with endeavour, *in Ispàgna*, in Spaine, *per iscòpo*, for an ayme.

Sing.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Il, \text{ the, or a.} \\ Del, \text{ of the, or of a.} \\ Al, \text{ to the, or to a.} \\ Dal, \text{ from the, or from a, or by the.} \end{array} \right.$

Plur.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} I, \text{ or li, the.} \\ Déi, or délli, of the.} \\ Ai, or álli, to the.} \\ Dái, or dáli, from the, or by the.} \end{array} \right.$

Sing.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Lo, \text{ the, or a.} \\ Dello, of the, or of a.} \\ Allo, to the, or to a.} \\ Dállo, from the, or from a, or by the.} \end{array} \right.$

Plur.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Gli, \text{ the.} \\ Degli, of the.} \\ Agli, to the.} \\ Dagli, from the, or by the.} \end{array} \right.$

Sing.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} La, \text{ the, or a.} \\ Délla, of the, or of a.} \\ Alla, to the, or to a.} \\ Dál-la, from the, or from a, or by the.} \end{array} \right.$

Plur.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Le, \text{ the.} \\ Delle, of the.} \\ Alle, to the.} \\ Dálle, from the, or by the.} \end{array} \right.$

*Il*, and *lo*, serve to the masculine singular, *i*, and *gli*, to the masculine plurall.

*La*, to the feminine singular.

*Le*, to the feminine plurall.

As, *Il cavállo*, a horse, &c. *li cavállo*, horses.

*Lo Spirito*, a spirit, *gli spiriti*, spirits.

*La scala*, a ladder, *le scale*, ladders.

*Il*, is used before words, beginning with a single consonant, as *il cavállo*, a horse, *il libro*, a book, and so is, *li*, as *li cavállo*, Horses, but if the following word begins with an *l*, *i*. is used for better sound sake, *i libri*, not *li libri*, books.

*Lo*, is used before words beginning with a double consonant, the first whereof is an *s*, as *lo spirito*, a spirit, *lo strale*, an arrow or dart. It is also used before words beginning with a vowel, and then it is contracted thus, *l'amóre*, love, *l'ódio*, hatred.

*Gli*, is used before words beginning with a double consonant: as hath been said of *lo*; and also before words beginning with a vowel, as *gli amóri*, the loves, *gli honóri*, the honours: but before *z*, it is contracted, as *gl'inimici*, the enemies, *gl'infedeli*, the infidels.

*I*, is used before words, beginning with a single consonant, specially an *l*. as *i fiori*, the flowers, *i fiati*, the blasts, *i libri*, the books.

*La*, is used before words beginning with either single, or double consonants, *la torre*, the tower, *la spada*, the sword, but if before a vowel, then it is usually contracted thus *l'ánima*, the soul, *l'arte*, the trade, or arte.

*Le*, used before words beginning with either single, or double consonants, as, *le torri*, the towers, *le spade*, the swords, but if before a vowel, it may either be contracted, or not, saying, *l'inimicitie*, the enmities, or *le inimicitie*.

*La, le, Li, lo*, coming after *de, a, da, ne*, double their *l*,

as *dello*, of the, not *de lo*, *allo* to the, not *a lo*, *dallo*, from the, not *dalo*, *nella*, in the, not *néla*, unless in poetry.

Observe that, *il*, and *lo*, sometimes relate to persons, sometimes to things, and signify him, or that, as *il vèdo*, I see him, or see that, *lo vèdo*, I see him, or that.

*Gli*, and *li*, likewise relate to persons, or things either in the singular, or plurall number.

*Gli parlai*, I spake to him.

*Gli sentii*, I heard them.

*Gli ho venduti quei libri*, I have sold him those books.

*Li mandai avviso*, I sent him advice.

*Li scopettai ben' bene, quei vestimenti*, I brusht those clothes very well.

*Li viddi tutti quanti affogare*, I saw them every one drowned.

*Il, la, li, le*, before, *mio, tuo, suo, nostro, vostro, loro*, &c. have no signification; and serve only for ornament, *il mio capello*, my hat, *la mia frusta*, my whip, the my hat were non-sense.

Observe that *e*, is gracefully put between *gli*, and *lo*, *gli*, and *la*, *gli*, and *li*, *gli*, and *le*, *gli*, and *ne*.

*Glielo*, to him it, masculine.

*Gliela*, to him it, feminine.

*Glieli*, to him them, masculine.

*Gliele*, to him them, feminine.

*Gliene*, to him thereof, or therewith. And most commonly, it is used speaking to men; but sometimes to women: And this to avoid repetition, as *menò certi cani all' imperatore & presentoglieli*, or *presentogliene*,

he brought certain dogs to the Emperour and presented them him, or him therewith, to avoid, saying, *menò certi cani all' Imperatore, e quelli presentò a lui*, he brought certain dogs to the Emperour, and them presented unto him.

Observe that *la*, and *le* sometimes relate to persons, sometimes to things, as hath been hinted upon *li*, *l'arma*, *Jo la tengo forte*, the weapon I hold it fast, *le vedi quella arme*, dost see those weapons, *e poco, non le basta*. Its little, it is not sufficient for her, *le*, being a contract of, *a lei*, which implyes as much as, to her, to your Lordship, or Ladyship, &c. *le bacio le mani*. I kisse your Lordships, or Ladyship's hands.

Observe that, *mi. ci. ti. vi. si.* coming before, *la. lo. li. le. ne.* change *i*, into *e*.

Saying in stead of

<i>mi lo</i>	<i>me lo</i>	<i>me la</i>	<i>me li</i>	<i>me le</i>	<i>me ne</i>
<i>ci lo</i>	<i>ce lo</i>	<i>ce la</i>	<i>ce li</i>	<i>ce le</i>	<i>ce ne</i>
<i>ti lo</i>	<i>te lo</i>	<i>te la</i>	<i>te li</i>	<i>te le</i>	<i>te ne</i>
<i>vi lo</i>	<i>ve lo</i>	<i>ve la</i>	<i>ve li</i>	<i>ve le</i>	<i>ve ne</i>
<i>si lo</i>	<i>se lo</i>	<i>se la</i>	<i>se li</i>	<i>se le</i>	<i>se ne</i>

*Di*, of.

*A*, to.

*Da*, from.

*Di Pietro*, of Peter, or Peter's.

*A Cesare*, to Cesar.

*Da Cesare*, from Cesar.

*Di Napoli*, of Naples.

*A Napoli*, at, or to Naples.

*Da Napoli*, from Naples.

The terminations of nouns substantives and  
adjectives,

*A.*

Words ending in *a*. in the singular, make *e*. in the plurall, and are feminines, *la porta*, a gate, *le porte*, gates.

Except names of offices and dignities, which are masculine and make *i*. in the plurall, as *il profeta*, a prophet, *li profeti*, prophets, but if it be accented then it is the same in the plurall, as in the singular, whether masculine, or feminine, as *la città*, a city, *le città*, cities, *il potestà*, a governour, *li potestà*, governours, some have two plurals, *ala*, a wing, *ále*, or *áli*, wings, *arma*, a weapon, *árme*, or *ármi*, weapons.

*E.*

Makes *i* in the plurall, whether masculine, or feminine, *il piede*, a foot, *li piedi*, feet, *la mente*, the mind, *le menti*, minds, *búe*, an ox, makes *búoi*.

Note, that some words are both masculine and feminine.

*Fúne*, a rope.

*Cárcere*, a prison.

*Fánte*, a servant.

*Fíne*, an end.

*Fónte*, a spring.

*Consorte*, a husband, or wife.

*Nóbile*, noble.

*Fáccile*, easy.

*Sottile*, small.

*Possibile*, possible.

*Cortése*, courteous, &c.

Saying, *il*, or, *la fune*, a rope, *li*, or, *le funi*, ropes, and so of the rest.

*Il consorte cortése*, a courteous husband.

*Li consorti cortési*, courteous husbands.

*La consorte cortése*, a courteous wife,

*Le consorti cortési*, courteous wives.

*Il*, *li*, *la*, and *le*, making only the difference.

Note also, that words ending in *ie*, make the same in the plurall, as in the singular.

*La effigie*, the effigies, pl. *le effigie*, the effigies.

*La spécie*, the kind, pl. *le spécie*, the kinds.

*La superficie*, the superficies, *le superficie*, the superficies.

*La tempérie*, the season, or temperament.

*Le tempérie*, the seasons, or temperaments.

But *móglie*, a wife, makes, *mógli*, wives.

And *mille*, a thousand, makes, *mila*, thousands.

# I.

Makes *i*. in the plurall.

*Il pári*, the like, pl. *li pári*, masculine.

*La pári*, the like, pl. *le pári*, feminine.

*Il dà*, a day, *li dà*, dayes.

Indeed all words that have an accent on them; are the same in the plurall, as in the singular; and are only distinguished by the article.



O.

Makes *i*. in the plurall, and are all masculines, but *máno*, a hand: *la mánò*, a hand, *le mánì* hands.

*Il cavállo*, a horſe, *li caváli* horſes.

*Il régnò*, a Kingdome, *li régni*, Kingdomes.

Some words have their ſingular, both in *o*, and in *e*: as *corriéro*, or *corriére*, a Poſt that carries letters, *cavagliéro*, or *cavagliére*, a Gentleman, or Knight, *penſiéro*, or *penſiére*, a thought, *deſtriéro*, or *deſtriére*, a ſteed, *vérmò*, or *vérmè*, a worm.

Words ending in *io*, make their plurall by taking away *o*, as *occhio*, an eye, *occhi*, eyes, *ſavio*, a wiſe man, *ſavi*, wiſe men, *ſacrificio*, a ſacrifice, *ſacrifici*, ſacrifices, *ufficio*, a duty, *uffici*, duties, *ſpecchio*, a looking-glaſſe, *ſpecchi*, looking-glaſſes, *uſuráio*, an uſurer, *uſurái*, uſurers, except, *eſſercitio*, an exerciſe; *eſſercitii*, exerciſes, *témpio*, a temple, *témpi*, temples, *vítio*, a vice, plur. *vítii*, vices, *martirio*, martyrdom, *martirii*, martyrdoms, to make a diſtinction between *témpo*, time, which makes in the plurall, *témpi*, times, *eſſercito*, an army, *eſſerciti*, armies; *vite*, a vine, *viti*, vines, *martire*, a martyr, *martiri*, martyrs.

Note that, *huómo* a man, makes in the plurall, *huómìni*, men.

*Tño*, thine, plurall; *tñoi*, thine, and ſome words, ending in *lo*, make *gli*, in the plurall, as *capéllo*, a hair, *capégli*, hairs, or head of hair, *quéllo* that, *quégli* thoſe, &c.

## U.

Makes *u*, in the plurall, as, *la virtù*, vertue, *le virtù*, virtues.

*La grù*, a crane. *le grù*, cranes.

Observe, that nounes ending in *co*, *ca*, *go*, *ga*, make their plurals, in *chi*, *che*, *ghi*, *ghe*, as,

*Giùco*, a game, pl. *giùchi*, games.

*Pàrca*, one of the fatal sisters, pl. *pàrche*, fatal sisters.

*Luògo*, a place, pl. *luòghi*, places.

*Piàga*, a sore, pl. *piàghe*, sores.

Except,

*Médico*, a phyfician, pl. *medici*, phyficians.

*Canónico*, a canon of a cathedrall, pl. *canónici*, canons.

*Gréco*, a Grecian, pl. *gréci*, grecians.

*Pórco*, a hog, pl. *pórci*, hogs.

*Mónaco*, a monk, pl. *mónaci*, monks.

*Mendico*, a begger, pl. *mendici*, beggers.

*Próco*, a woer, pl. *próci*, woers.

*Mágo*, a wizzard, pl. *mági*, wizzards.

*Salvático*, a wild man, pl. *salvatici*, wild men.

*Amico*, a friend, pl. *amici*, friends, and some few others.

These following words of the masculine gender, have a double plurall, the later whereof seems to be of the feminine, and are now most in use, with the best Italians.

*Anello*, a ring, pl. *li anelli*, or, *le anella*, rings.

*Braccio*, an arme, pl. *li bracci*, or, *le braccia*, arms.

*Briciolo*, a crumme, pl. *li bricioli*, or, *le briciola*, crumbs.

**Calcagno**, a heel, pl. *li calcagni*, or, *le calcagna*, heels.

**Castello**, a castle, plur. *li castelli*, or, *le castella*, castles.

**Cárro**, a chariot, pl. *li cárri*, or *le càrra*, chariots.

**Centenàio**, a hundred, pl. *li centenái*, or *le centenàia*, hundreds.

**Cérchio**, a hoop, pl. *li cérchi*, or *le cérchia*, hoops.

**Cervéllo**, brains, pl. *li cervélli*, or *le cervélla*, brains.

**Chióstro**, a cloyster, pl. *li chióstri*, or *le chióstra*.

**Ciglio**, a brow, pl. *li cigli*, or *le ciglia*, brows.

**Coltello**, a knife, pl. *li coltelli*, or *le coltella*, knives.

**Corbello**, a basket, pl. *li corbelli*, or *le corbella*, baskets.

**Córno**, a horn, pl. *li córni*, or *le córna*, horns.

**Dito**, a finger, pl. *li diti*, or *le dita*, fingers.

**Fáto**, a fate, pl. *li fàti*, or *le fàta*, the fates.

**Fico**, a fig, pl. *li fichi*, or *le fica*, figs.

**Filo**, a thred, pl. *le fili*, or *le fila*, threds.

**Fondaménto**, a foundation, pl. *li fondaménti*, or *le fondaménta*, foundations.

**Fóssa**, a ditch, pl. *li fóssi*, or *le fóssa*, ditches.

**Frútto**, a fruit, pl. *li frútti*, or *le frútta*, fruits.

**Ginóchio**, a knee, pl. *li ginóchi*, or *le ginóchia*, knees.

**Granélllo**, a grain, pl. *li granélli*, or *le granélla*, grains.

**Grído**, a shout, pl. *li grídi*, or *le grída*, shouts.

**Gúscio**, a shell, pl. *li gúsci*, or *le gúscia*, shells.

**Interióre**, an intrall, pl. *gli interióri*, or *le interióra*, intrals.

**Lábbro**, a lip, pl. *li lábbri*, or *le lábbra*, lips.

**Léгно**, a stick or billet, pl. *i légni*, or *le légna*, sticks, or billets.

*Len:*

*Lenzuólo*, a sheet, pl. *i lenzuóli*, or *le lenzuóla*, sheets.

*Membro*, a limb, pl. *i membri*, or *le membra*, limbs.

*Miglio*, a mile, pl. *i migli*, or *le miglia*, miles.

*Migliáio* a thousand, pl. *i migliái*, or *le migliáia*, thousands.

*Moggio*, a bushell, pl. *i móggi*, or *le móggia*, bushels.

*Molino*, a mill, pl. *i molini*, or *le mulina*, milles.

*Muro*, a wall, pl. *i múri*, or *le mura*, walls.

*Orécchio*, an ear, pl. *gli orécchi*, or *le orécchia*, ears.

*Ossó*, a bone, pl. *gli óssi*, or *le óssa*, bones.

*Paio* } a couple, pl. *i pái* } or *le páia* } couples.  
*Páro* } *i pári* } or *le pára* }

*Peccáto*, a sin, pl. *i peccáti*, or *le peccáta*, sins.

*Pugno*, a fist, pl. *i púgni*, or *le púgna*, fists.

*Quadrélló*, an arrow, pl. *i quadrélli*, or *le quadrélla*, arrows.

*Rastélló*, a rake, pl. *i rastélli*, or *le rastélla*, rakes.

*Riso*, a laughter, pl. *i rísi*, or *le rísa*, laughers.

*Sácco*, a bag, pl. *i sácchi*, or *le sácca*, bags.

*Stáio* } a bushel, pl. *i stái* } or *le stáia* } bushels.  
*Stáro* } *i stári* } or *le stára* }

*Strido*, a crying out, pl. *i stridi*, or *le strida*, cryings out.

*Teláro* } a loom, pl. *i telári* } or *le telára* } looms.  
*Teláio* } *telái* } or *le teláia* }

*Tétto*, a roof, pl. *i tétti*, or *le tétta*, roofs.

*Tuórlo*, a yelk, pl. *i tuórli*, or *le tuórta*, yelks.

*Váso*, a vessel, pl. *i vási*, or *le vása*, vessels.

*Vestíggio*, a footstep, pl. *i vestíggii*, or *le vestíggia*, footsteps.

*Vestíménto*, a garment, pl. *i vestíménti*, or *le vestíménta*, garments.

*Uóvo*, an egg, pl. *gli uóvi*, or *le uóva*, eggs.

Observe that feminines are made of masculines, by turning *o*. into *a*. as *amíco*, a hee-friend, *amíca*, a shee-friend, *béllo*, fair, masculine; *bélla*, fair, feminine. And generally nouns ending in *a*, are feminines, except some few, as *Dúca*, a Duke, *podestà*, a magistrate, *bóia*, an executioner, &c.

All nouns ending in *ánza*, *énza*, *tríce*, and *óre*, are of the feminine gender, as *abondánza*, plenty *Patíénza*, patience, *ballatríce*, a woman dancer, except *poltróne*, a coward, *salóne*, a great Hall, *boccóne*, a morsell.

All nouns ending in *o*, and *óre*, are of the masculine gender, as *amíco*, a friend, *il látore*, the bearer, except *máno*, a hand.

These following nouns are seldome used, but in the plurall.

*Gl' amплéssi*, embraces.

*Le carézze*, dalliances, or caresses.

*Le fórbici*, sheers.

*Le nózze*, nuptials.

*Le facoltà* } riches.

*Le richézze* }

*Mérci*, wares.

The dignities and titles of men and women, are  
as followeth.

*Imperatore*, an Emperour.

*Imperatrice*, an Emperesse.

*Império*, an Empire.

*Ré*, a King.

*Reina* } a Queen.  
*Regina* }

*Régno* } a Kingdome, or Realme.  
*Reame* }

*Principe*, a Prince.

*Principessa*, a Princess.

*Principato*, a principality.

*Duca*, a Duke.

*Duchessa*, a Dutchesse.

*Ducato*, a Dukedome.

*Conte*, an Earle.

*Contessa*, a Countesse.

*Contado*, an Earldome.

*Marchese*, a Marquis.

*Marchesa* } a Lady Marquis, or Marchionesse.  
*Marcheggiana* }

*Marchesato*, a Marquisship.

*Barone*, a Baron.

*Barona* } a Baronnesse.  
*Baronessa* }

*Baronia*, a Barony.

*Cavagliero* } a Knight, or any Gentleman in some  
*Cavagliere* } mon discourse.

*Signora*, }  
or } a Lady, or Gentlewoman.  
*Dama* }

*Cavaglierato*, Knighthood.

*Gentilhuomo*, a Gentleman.

*Gentildonna*, a Gentlewoman.

*Messere*, a goodman such a one, especially of inferior Mechanics.

*Madonna*, a goody such a one, or gammer such a one. See more to this purpose in the Treatise of addressing Letters.

Observe, that the surnames of Families most commonly end in *i*, as *Orsini*, *Piccolomini*; though some end in *a*, and in *o*, as *Bentivoglio*, *Castelvetro*, *Colonna*, *Caraffa*, *Gonzaga*, &c.

The scale how to make nouns signifie more or less, better or worse, in their several significations,

'*Otto*, Nouns ending in *otto*, declare the thing to be handsomely big, indifferently likely, as *capello*, a hat; *capellotto*, a pretty big hat.

'*One*, Nouns ending in *one* declare the thing something exceeding proportion, yet not ugly or despicable, as *capello*, a hat; *capellone*, a good big hat.

'*Accio*, Nouns ending in *accio* declare the thing not onely to exceed proportion, but contemptible withall, as *capello*, a hat; *capellaccio*, an ugly great hat.

'*Etto*. Nouns ending in *etto* declare the smallness and prettiness of the thing; as *capello*, a hat; *capelletto*, a pretty little hat.

'*Ino*. Nouns ending in *ino* declare the thing yet smaller and prettier, as *capello*, a hat; *capellino*, a very pretty little hat.

'*Uccio*, or '*Uzzo*. Nouns ending in *uccio* or *uzzo*, declare the thing to be of the least and absolutely de-

D

spicable

spicable and contemptible, as *capéllo*, a hat; *capelluccio*, or *capelluzzo*, a little sorry ill-favoured hat.

And so in a thousand other examples, which is a very great liberty of the Language.

Now as hath been said of a masculine Noun, the like may be of a feminine, making of it to end in *a*, as *cavalla*, a mare; *cavallotta*, *cavallona*, *cavallaccia*, *cavalletta*, *cavallina*, *cavalluccia*, or *cavalluzza*.

Most of the nick-names are made to run upon this termination, as by way of detraction, as *Minicuccio*, from *Dominico*, a mans name so call'd; *Minicuccia*, from *Dominicuccia*, a womans name so call'd; *Cárlo*, *Charles*; *Carluccio*, little *Charles*, *Anna*, *Anne*; *Anniccia*, little *Nan*; though some run otherwise, as *Chécco* for *Francésco*, as *Frank* for *Francis*, *Chécca* for *Francésca*, *Frank* for *Frances*, *Mas* for *Tomásso*, *Tom* for *Thomas*; as *Mas Aniello*, for *Tomásso Aniello*, a name sufficiently noted in *Naples*.

Observe, that if the noun that you would diminish end in *no*, *na*, or *re*, *ra*, by making the same end in *ello*, if masculine; in *ella*, if feminine, you express a kinde of prettiness of the same, as *ásino*, an ass; *asinello*, a little pretty ass; *ásina*, a she ass; *asinella*, a pretty she ass.

*Pastore*, a shepherd; *pastorello*, a little shepherd; *pastora*, a shepherdess; *pastorella*, a little pretty shepherdess.

Some diminutives are also made to end in *nólo*, *nóla*, *uolino*, *uolina*; as *pezzo*, a piece, or while of time; *pezzuolo*, a little piece, or while of time; *pezzuolino*, a very little piece, or small while of time; also *pezza*, a piece, clout, or handkerchief; *pezzuolo*, a very small piece, &c. Also *chiesa*, a Church; *chiesuola*, a little



little Church; *chiesuolina*, a very little Church, or Chapel.

Some also end in *éssa*, as *Dottóre*, a Doctor; *Dottoréssa*, a she-Doctor; *Medichéssa*, a she-Physician; from *Médico*, a Physician.

Observe, that nouns ending in *ne*, by taking away the last vowel, and adding *céllò* to it, you express the smallness and prettiness of the same; as *limóne*, a lemon; *limoncéllo*, a small lemon. The like if you adde *cino* to it, as *limorcino*, a small lemon. If the noun end in *na*, then cast the *a* and put *cina* to it, and you express the smallness and prettiness of it; as *coróna*, a crown; *coroncina*, a pretty little crown.

Observe, that if you make a feminine noun to end in *óne*, you express the bigness of it, and in a good sense; as *bel salóné*, a fair great Hall, from *sála*, a Hall; *che bel piazzóne*, what a fair great place? from *piazza*, a place.

Observe, that sometimes a diminutive is used after the augmentative, as *homaccinólo*, a little sorry man; *donnaccinóla*, a little sorry woman; and this is used in an ill sense: yet *homaccióto*, a well-set man, is used indifferently. Also, two diminutives are sometimes put together, to express the greater diminution or prettiness of the thing; *camerettina*, a little, little closet, or chamber; *sonettino*, a little sonnet, or ditty.

Observe, that such as end in *o*, or rather in *ro*, commonly make their diminutive to end in *étto*, as *biáncò*, white, *bianchéttò*, whitish; *chiáro*, clear, *chiarétto*, clearish, or pretty clear; *dúro*, hard, *durétto*, hardish, or pretty hard.

Observe, that nouns ending in *ésso* or *ésca*, are

much like the words ending in *ish* in English; *don-  
nèsco*, womanish; *fanciullèsca*, childish.

Observe, that by putting *ggiàre*, or *zàre*, to any noun, signifying person, office, beast, or any creature, you express the quality, nature, action or condition of that thing, person or creature; as *pavòne*, a Peacock; *pavoneggiàre*, to play the Peacock; *Pasqua*, Easter; *Pasqueggiàre*, to keep Easter; *Vólpe*, a Fox, *Volpeggiàre*, to play the Fox. *Pavonezzàre*, *pasquezzàre*, *volpezzàre*, are the same, but not so frequent in that termination.

Observe, that verbs that are made to end in *acchi-  
àre*, are meant in an ill sense, and by way of disparagement; *vivacchiàre*, to live hardly, to rub out; *sonnacchiàre*, to slumber, to be drowsy out of laziness; *scrivacchiàre*, to scribble; *pacchiàre*, to feed like a hog. But this caution must be had, that in imitation of these observations one be bold, but not too bold, for the ear and custome must be conductors herein; or else it is possible to mistake, as custome sayes, *homicino*, or *homicciuòlo*, for a little man, not *hométto*; *donnicinuòla*, rather than *donétta*, a little woman, though *domina* is much in use; *terricciuòla*, a little town, rather than *terrìna*, or *terréta*; *vecchierèlla*, a little old man, rather than *vecchiétto*, or *vecchino*; *muricciuòlo*, a little wall, rather than *murétto*; *fetterèlla*, a little slice, rather than *fettìna*, or *fettétta*; *tortorèlla*, a turtle dove, rather than *tortorìna*; *ardirèllo*, a little bold-face; *frascarèllo*, a wagge, rather than *arditino*, or *fraschètto*; *testicciuòla*, a little head of any beast; but *testìna*, a little head of any person, or little heads in cuts or ingravures. Good attention must master this difficulty.

Observe,

Observe, that words ending in *ame*, the kind or extreme quantity is express'd thereby, as *bestiame*, all manner of cattel; *pollame*, all manner of poultry; *uccellame*, all manner of birds; *legname*, all manner of timber; *rottame*, all manner of rubbish; *ossame*, all manner of bones; *carname*, all manner of flesh, or any carcase.

## Of the degrees of comparison.

*Buono*, good.

*Migliore*, better.

*Ottimo*,

*Buonissimo*, } best.

*Bene*, well.

*Miglio*.

*Benissimo*,

*Ottimamente*, } most excellent well.

*Peggior*, worse.

*Pessimo*,

*Malissimo*, } worst of all.

*Male*, ill.

*Peggio*, worse.

*Pessimamente*, most ill, or in the worst manner that may be.

*Grande*, great.

*Maggiore*,

*Più grande*, } greater.

*Grandissimo*, } most great.  
*Massimo*, }

*Grandemente*, greatly.

*Maggiormente*, the rather, or more especially.

*Massimamente*, most especially.

*Piccolo*, little.

*Minore*, } lesser.  
*Più piccolo*, }

*Piccolissimo*, } least, most little.  
*Minimo*, }

*Superiore*, above, superiour.

*Inferiore*, beneath, inferiour.

*Supremo*, highest.

*Infimo*, lowest.

*Poco*, little.

*Meno*, } less.  
*Marco*, }

*Pochissimo*, the fewest of, or extreame little.

*Alto*, high.

*Più alto*, more high.

*Altissimo*, } most high, highest.  
*Sommo*, }

*Molto*, much, or very.

*Più*, more.

*Moltissimo*, exceeding much, very much, if plur.  
 exceeding many.

Observe, that the general way of comparing is by  
*più*, or *meno*, more or less, as *più dōtto*, more learned;  
*men dōtto*, less learned; and that either *di*, *del*, *che*, or  
*ehe non* follows; as *'Egli è più auventurāto di me*, He  
 is more fortunate than I.

'Egli è più accorto del compagno, He is more wary than his fellow-partner.

'Egli parla più che nessuno, He speaks more than any body.

Hanno più guai che non credono, They have more sorrows than they believe.

The like if you put *méno* instead of *più*, as *Egli è men avventurato di me*, He is less fortunate than I, &c. The same of *méglio* and *péggio*, better and worse; as *'Egli scrive péggio di nessuno*, He writes worse than any body; *Parla meglio di tutti*, He speaks better than them all.

In certe cose riesce meglio del solito, In some things he comes off better than usual; In certe altre péggio, In some others worse.

La pratica fa meglio che la teorica semplice, The practice is better than meer theory.

Gli Inglese parlano meglio la lingua Italiana che non fanno i Francesi, The English speak better the Italian Language than the Frenchmen: Ma pronotiano poi la lingua Latina péggio che non fanno loro, But then they pronounce the Latin tongue worse than they do.

Observe, that by putting

Molto, } You express the same which in English;  
Assai, } far, or much.  
Via,

Molto più ricco, Far more rich.

Assai più letterato, Much more learned.

Vie, } più spedita, much more ready, nimble. And

Via, } then di, del, che, or che non, may follow, as occasion serves. Indeed *viè*, or *via*, are not so frequently used as *assai* and *molto*.

The superlative, or highest degree, is express'd as followeth.

Put *il* or *la* to *più* or *méno*, as,

*Il più dótto di tutti*, The learnedst of all.

*Il men ricco*, The least rich of all.

*La più bella di tutte*, The handsomest of all.

*La men bella*, The ill-favouredst of all, or the least handsome.

Again, put to words denoting quality, *íssimo*, or *íssima*, and you express the superlative.

*Buóno*, good; *buoníssimo*, best, or most good; *maf. buóna*, good; *buoníssima*, best, or most good, fem.

*Utile*, profitable; *utilíssimo*, most profitable.

*Dótto*, learned; *dottíssimo*, most learned.

Again, double words together, and according to the signification of the word you may express the superlative of the same; as,

*Quále volete dire di quélle signóre, quélle bella bella*, Which do you mean of those Ladies, she who is so extream handsome? *Chehà li denti biáncchi biáncchi*: VVho hath such infinite white teeth; *E li capégli biáncchi bióndi*, and infinite faire faire.

Also, by *quéllo*, *quélle*, *quélle*, *quélle*, &c. and *maggóre* or *minóre*, according as the sense imports, you express a superlative; *Tornáte con quélle maggiór prestézza che potete*, Come with the greatest speed you can.

Also, *ógni* and *maggióre* imply all possible as *con*; *Ogni maggiór diligenza*, VVith all possible diligence.

Observe, that by putting *il*, *lo*, or *la*, to any superlative

lative in *issimo* or *issima*, and you make as it were yet a further degree; as by super-excellency it is said of God Almighty, *l'altissimo*, the highest.

Observe, that by changing the last letter of the word ending in *issimo* into *amente*, you express an excess in quality; as *sicurissimo*, most sure; *sicurissimamente*, most assuredly; *perfettissimo*, most perfect; *perfettissimamente*, most perfectly.

The derivations of names from their Countreys are generally of these three terminations.

'*Ano*, as *Romano*, a Roman, from *Roma*, Rome.  
*Napolitano*, a Neopolitan, from *Nápoli*, Naples.

'*Ese*. *Genouése*, a Genevoys, from *Genóva*.

'*Ino*. *Perugino*, a Perugian, from *Perúgia*, a City of that name.

### Of Numbers.

'*Uno* } one, or { *úni* } speaking of set numbers.  
'*Una* } a, pl. { *úne* }

*Dúe* is both masculine and feminine; as *dúe pié di*, *dúe máni*, two hands.

'*Ambo*, both masculine and feminine; as *ámbi li fratélli*, both the brothers; *ámbo le sorelle*, both the sisters: but *ámbo* is not so frequent in common discourse.

*Amendúe*,  
*Ambedúe*,  
*Ambedúi*,  
*Ambidúi* } both masculine and feminine.

*Coppia,*  
*Páro,* } a couple, or pair.  
*Paio,* }  
*Fiata,* } a turn, or a bout, a time, as *mólte vólte*, ma-  
*Vólta,* } ny times; *paréchi vólte*, several times;  
*fiata* is not so frequent in discourse.

*'Uno*, one.

*Dúe*, two.

*Trè*, three.

*Quáttro*, four.

*Cinque*, five.

*Sei*, six.

*Sétte*, seven.

*'Otto*, eight.

*Nóve*, nine.

*Diéci*, ten.

*'Undeci*, eleven.

*Dódicí*, twelve.

*Trédici*, thirteen.

*Quatórdici*, fourteen.

*Quíndici*, fifteen.

*Séd'ci*, sixteen.

*Diecisétte*, seventeen.

*Diecióttó*, eighteen.

*Diecinóve*, nineteen.

*Vínti*, twenty.

*Vínt'úno*, one and twenty.

*Vénti dúe*, two and twenty, &c.

*Trénta*, thirty.

*Quaránta*, forty.

*Cinquánta*, fifty.

*Sessánta*, sixty.

*Sessánta*,



*Settanta*, seventy.

*Ottanta*, eighty.

*Nonanta*, }  
*Noranta*, } ninety.

*Cento*, a hundred.

*Ducento*, two hundred.

*Trecento*, three hundred, &c.

*Mille*, a thousand.

*Due mila*, two thousand.

*Cento mila*, a hundred thousand.

*Un millions*, a million.

*Decina*, half a score, or ten.

*Dozzina*, a dozen.

*Ventina*, a score.

*Trentina*, thirty.

*Quarantina*, forty, or two score.

*Centinaio*, }  
*Centinaro*, } a hundred.

*Migliaio*, }  
*Migliaro*, } a thousand.

Numbers in sequence.

*Primo*, first.

*Secundo*, second.

*Térzo*, third.

*Quárto*, fourth.

*Quinto*, fifth.

*Sésto*, sixth.

*Settimo*, seventh.

*Ottávo*, eighth.

*Nona*, ninth.

*Diecina*,

*Décimo*, tenth.  
*Undécimo*, eleventh.  
*Duodécimo*, twelfth.  
*Décimo terzo*, thirteenth.  
*Décimo quarto*, fourteenth.  
*Décimo quinto*, fifteenth.  
*Décimo sesto*, sixteenth.  
*Décimo settimo*, seventeenth.  
*Décimo ottavo*, eighteenth.  
*Décimo nono*, nineteenth.  
*Vinti é simo*, } twentieth.  
*Vigésimo*, }  
*Trentésimo*, thirtieth.  
*Quarantésimo*, fortieth.  
*Cinquantésimo*, fiftieth.  
*Sessantésimo*, sixtieth.  
*Settantésimo*, seventieth.  
*Ottantésimo*, eightieth.  
*Nonantésimo*, } ninetieth.  
*Norantésimo*, }  
*Centésimo*, hundredth.  
*Ducentésimo*, two hundred.  
*Trecentésimo*, three hundred.  
*Quattrocentésimo*, four hundred.  
*Cinquecentésimo*, five hundred.  
*Seicentésimo*, six hundred.  
*Settecentésimo*, seven hundred.  
*Ottocentésimo*, eight hundred.  
*Novacentésimo*, nine hundred.  
*Millésimo*, a thousandth.

*Ogni* signifieth every.

*Tutti* all, masc. as *tutti li cavagliéri*, All the Gen-  
 tlemen. *Tutte*,

*Tutte*, all, feminine; as *Tutte le Dame*, All the Ladies.

*Tutto*, all, masculine; as *Tutto il tempo della vita mia*, All my life-time.

*Tutta*, all, feminine; as *Tutta la robba*, All the wealth.

*Tutto* without an addition, signifies, the whole, or all; *Quel è tutto*, That's all. Generally, *tutti*, &c. are meant of some set number.

*Qualche* signifies some; as *qualche cosa*, something; and it is ever used in the singular.

*Alcuni*, some, is the plural to *qualche*; as *alcuni vennero*, some came; *alcuni restarono*, some staid away.

*Alcuno*, some one, or any, masc. as, *Se alcuno dicesse*, If any man should say.

*Alcuna*, Some one, feminine; *Se alcuna dicesse*, If some one woman should say.

*Alcuni*, Some, or any; *Se alcuni dicessero*, If any should say, or some men should say.

*Alcune*, Some or any; *Se alcune dicessero*, If some women should say. See more among the Pronounes, to that purpose.

### The dayes of the week?

*Lunedì*, Monday.

*Martedì*, Tuesday.

*Mércore*,  
*Mercordì*, } *VVednesday*.

*Giovedì*,  
*Giòbbia*, } *Thursday*.

*Venerdì*,

*Vènere* } Friday.  
*Venerdì* }  
*Sábato*, Saturday.  
*Doménica*, Sunday.

The months of the year:

*Gennáro*, } January.  
*Gennáio*, }  
*Febráro*, } February.  
*Febráio*, }  
*Márzo*, March.  
*Apríle*, April.  
*Mággio*, May.  
*Giúgno*, June.  
*Lúglio*, July.  
*Agósto*, August.  
*Settémbré*, September.  
*Ottóbre*, October.  
*Novémbré*, November.  
*Decémbré*, December.

The Seasons.

*Príma véra*, } Spring.  
*Prímo témpo*, }  
*Státe*, } Summer.  
*Estáte*, }  
*Autúnno*, } Autumn, or Fall.  
*Infrescáta*, }  
*Invéerno*, Winter.

## The Pronouns.

## I.

Sing. {  
*Io*, I.  
*Di me*, of me.  
*A me*, to me.  
*Me*, me.  
*O me*, O me.  
*Da me*, from me.

Plur. {  
*Noi*, we.  
*Di noi*, of us.  
*A noi*, to us.  
*Noi*, us.  
*O noi*, O we.  
*Da noi*, from us.

Sing. {  
*Tu*, thou.  
*Di te*, of thee.  
*A te*, to thee.  
*Te*, thee.  
*O tu*, O thou.  
*Da te*, from thee.

Plur. {  
*Voi*, ye.  
*Di voi*, of ye.  
*A voi*, to ye.  
*Voi*, yee.  
*O voi*, O ye.  
*Da voi*, from ye.

Sing. {  
*Egli, ei, e'*, he.  
*Di lui*, of him.  
*A lui*, to him.  
*Lui*, him.  
*Da lui*, from him.

Plur. {  
*Loro*, they.  
*Di loro*, of them.  
*A loro*, to them.  
*Loro*, them.  
*Da loro*, from them.

Sing. {  
*Ella, lei*, she.  
*Di lei*, of her.  
*A lei*, to her.  
*Lei*, her.  
*Da lei*, from her.

Plur. {  
*Elleno, or loro*, they.  
*Di loro*, of them.  
*A loro*, to them.  
*Loro*, them.  
*Da loro*, from them.

*Stéſſo,* } masc. ſing. ſelf-ſame.  
*Medéſimo,* }

*Stéſſa,* } fem. ſing. ſelf-ſame.  
*Medéſima,* }

*Stéſſi,* } masc. plur. ſelf-ſame.  
*Medéſimi,* }

*Stéſſe,* } fem. plur. ſelf-ſame.  
*Medéſime,* }

'*Ella,* or *lei,* is uſed inſtead of *Voffignoria,* your VVor-  
 ſhip, or Lordſhip, or Ladyſhip.

Sing. { *Ella,* or *lei,* your Lordſhip or Ladyſhip.  
           { *Dilei,* of your Lordſhip or Ladyſhip.  
           { *A lei,* to your Lordſhip or Ladyſhip.  
           { *Lei,* your Lordſhip or Ladyſhip.  
           { *Da lei,* from your Lordſhip or Ladyſhip.

Plur. { *Loro,* your Lordſhips or Ladyſhips.  
           { *Di loro,* of your Lordſhips or Ladyſhips.  
           { *A loro,* to your Lordſhips or Ladyſhips.  
           { *Loro,* your Lordſhips or Ladyſhips.  
           { *Da loro,* from your Lordſhips or Ladyſhips.

But then *ſignorie* is commonly put with *loro,* as  
*Le ſignorie loro m'hauranno per iſcuſato,* Your Lord-  
 ſhips or Ladyſhips ſhall excuſe me; or alſo thus is  
 uſual in diſcourſe.

*Lor' altri ſignori,* Ye my Lords and Gentlemen.

*Lor' altre ſignore,* Ye my Ladies and Gentlewomen.

*Di loro,* your Lordſhips or Ladyſhips. See the  
 Treatiſe of addreſſing of Letters.

## 2.

Sing. { *Il mio*, my.  
 masc. { *Del mio*, of my.  
 { *Al mio*, to my.  
 { *Dal mio*, from my.

Plur. { *I*, or *li miei*, my.  
 { *De'*, or *delli miei*, my.  
 { *Ai*, or *alli miei*, to my.  
 { *Dai*, or *dalli miei*, from my.

Sing. { *La mia*, my.  
 fem. { *Della mia*, of my.  
 { *Alla mia*, to my.  
 { *Dalla mia*, from my.

Plur. { *Le mie*, my.  
 { *Delle mie*, of my.  
 { *Alle mie*, to my.  
 { *Dalle mie*, from my.

Sing. masc. { *Il tuo*, thy.  
 { *Del tuo*, of thy.  
 { *Al tuo*, to thy.  
 { *Dal tuo*, from thy.

Plur. { *I*, or *li tuoi*, thy.  
 { *De'*, or *delli tuoi*, of thy.  
 { *Ai*, or *Alli tuoi*, to thy.  
 { *Dai*, or *dalle tuoi*, from thy.

Sing. fem. { *La tua*, thy.  
 { *Della tua*, of thy.  
 { *Alla tua*, to thy.  
 { *Dalla tua*, from thy.

Plur. { *Le tue*, thy.  
 { *Delle tue*, of thy.  
 { *Alle tue*, to thy.  
 { *Dalle tue*, from thy.

Sing. masc. { *Il suo*, his.  
 { *Del suo*, of his.  
 { *Al suo*, to his.  
 { *Dal suo*, from his.

Plur. { *I*, or *li suoi*, his.  
 { *Dei*, or *delli suoi*, of his.  
 { *Ai*, or *alli suoi*, to his.  
 { *Dai*, or *dalli suoi*, from his.

	<i>La sua</i> , hers.	<i>Le sue</i> , hers.	Plur.
Sing.	<i>Della sua</i> , of hers.	<i>Delle sue</i> , of hers.	
fem.	<i>Alla sua</i> , to hers.	<i>Alle sue</i> , to hers.	
	<i>Dalla sua</i> , from hers.	<i>Dalle sue</i> , from hers.	

	<i>Il nostro</i> , our.	
Sing.	<i>Del nostro</i> , of our.	
mafc.	<i>Al nostro</i> , to our.	
	<i>Dal nostro</i> , from our.	

	<i>I</i> , or <i>li</i> , <i>nostri</i> , our.	
Plur.	<i>Dei</i> , or <i>delli nostri</i> , of our.	
	<i>Ai</i> , or <i>alli nostri</i> , to our.	
	<i>Dai</i> , or <i>dalli nostri</i> , from our.	

	<i>Il vostro</i> , your.	
Sing.	<i>Del vostro</i> , of your.	
mafc.	<i>Al vostro</i> , to your.	
	<i>Dal vostro</i> , from your.	

	<i>I</i> , or <i>li</i> , <i>vostri</i> , your.	
Plur.	<i>Dei</i> , or <i>delli vostri</i> , of your.	
	<i>Ai</i> , or <i>alli vostri</i> , to your.	
	<i>Dai</i> , or <i>dalli vostri</i> , from your.	

The feminines are made by changing *a* into *a*, as *nostro*, *nostra*, *vostro*, *vostra*, sing. *nostre*, *vostre*, plur. as hath been shewn of *la mia*, *la tua*, *le mie*, *le tue*; as, *la mia casa*, my house; *le mie case*, my houses.

Observe, that if *mio*, *tuo*, *suo*, *mia*, *tua*, *sua*, end not a period, that they are pronounc'd as it were in one sound, as *è mio pensiero*, It is my fancy or invention; *è pensiero mio*, it is my care and duty, &c. The like in

*Dio*,



Plur.

*Dio*, God, *Dio voglia*, God grant; *Voleſſe Dio*, Would to God.

rs.

Obſerve, that *il mio*, *il tuo*, *il ſuo*, *il noſtro*, *il voſtro*, *il loro*, being put without addition, ſignifies, my wealth or eſtate, thine, his, ours, yours, theirs; *poſſeſſo il mio*, I enjoy my own; and *Egli poſſede il ſuo*, He enjoys his own.

Obſerve, that *i noſtri*, *voſtri*, *i miei*, *i ſuoi*, is meant neareſt friends, kindred, or domeſticks, *v. z.* dwelling in the ſame houſhold.

Obſerve, that ſpeaking to, or of more, whether men or women, *loro* is indifferent to either; as,

*Il loro ben ſtare*, your welfare.

*Del loro ben ſtare*, of your welfare.

*Al loro ben ſtare*, to your welfare.

*Dal loro ben ſtare*, from your welfare.

S. mafc.	{	<i>Il cui</i> , whoſe.	{	Plur.	<i>Li cui</i> , whoſe.
		<i>Del cui</i> , of whoſe.			<i>Delli cui</i> , of whoſe.
		<i>Al cui</i> , to whoſe.			<i>Alli cui</i> , to whoſe.
		<i>Dal cui</i> , from whoſe.			<i>Dalli cui</i> , frõ whoſe.

Pl. fem.	{	<i>La cui</i> , whoſe.	{	Plur.	<i>Le cui</i> , whoſe.
		<i>Della cui</i> , of whoſe.			<i>Delle cui</i> , of whoſe.
		<i>Ala cui</i> , to whoſe.			<i>Alle cui</i> , to whoſe.
		<i>Dalla cui</i> , from whoſe.			<i>Dalle cui</i> , frõ whoſe.

S. mafc.	{	<i>E' altrui</i> , anothers.
		<i>Del altrui</i> , of anothers.
		<i>Al altrui</i> , to anothers.
		<i>Dal altrui</i> , from anothers.

Plur. { *Gli altrui*, others.  
*Degli altrui*, of others.  
*Agl' altrui*, to others.  
*Dagli altrui*, from others.

And properly *lo, del, al, dal*, belongs not to *altrui*, but to the word following; as *l'altrui potere*, anothers power, that is, *il potere di altri*, or *di alcùn altro*, the power of others, or of any other.

Sing. fern. { *L' altrui*, anothers.  
*Dell' altrui*, of anothers.  
*All' altrui*, to anothers.  
*all' altrui*, from anothers.

Plur. { *Le altrui*, others.  
*Delle altrui*, of others.  
*Alle altrui*, to others.  
*Dalle altrui*, from others.

Observe, *Di altrui*, of another, or others.  
*Ad altrui*, to another, or to anothers.  
*Da altrui*, from another, or from anothers.  
 is indifferent either for gender or number; as, *La ròbba altrui*, anothers wealth; *Le ròbbe altrui*, anothers goods.

The like of *Di chi*, whose, or of whom.  
*A chi*, to whose, or to whom.  
*Da chi*, from whose, or from whom.

Observe this elegance, that *di chi* comes elegantly between the article and the noun throughout, and in each

each number; *Il di chi honore*, Whose honour; *Le di chi ricchezza*, Whose riches. As may also be said of *lui* and *lei*; *Il di lui sapere*, *la di lei bellezza*, his knowledge, her beauty.

Sing. { *Quello*, he, or that.  
           *Di quello*, of him, or that.  
           *A quello*, to him, or that.  
           *Da quello*, from him, or that.

Plur. { *Quelli*, they or those.  
           *Di quelli*, of them or those.  
           *A quelli*, to them or those.  
           *Da quelli*, from them or those.

Sing. { *Quella*, she, or that.  
           *Di quella*, of her, or that.  
           *A quella*, to her, or that.  
           *Da quella*, from her, or that.

Plur. { *Quelle*, they or those.  
           *Di quelle*, of them or those.  
           *A quelle*, to them or those.  
           *Da quelle*, from them or those.

*Quello* and *quella* being applyed to things as well as persons.

Sing. { *Questo*, this man or thing.  
           *Di questo*, of this man or thing.  
           *A questo*, to this man or thing.  
           *Da questo*, from this man or thing.

Plur. { *Questi*, these men, or things.  
*Di questi*, of these men, or things.  
*A questi*, to these men or things.  
*Da questi*, from these men, or things.

Sing. { *Questa*, this woman or thing.  
*Di questa*, of this woman or thing.  
*A questa*, to this woman or thing.  
*Da questa*, from this woman or thing.

Plur. { *Queste*, these women or things.  
*Di queste*, of these women or things.  
*A queste*, to these women or things.  
*Da queste*, from these women or things.

*Questo* and *questa* indifferently applied to things or persons.

Sing. { *Colui*, he or that man.  
*Di colui*, of him.  
*A colui*, to him.  
*Da colui*, from him.

Plur. { *Coloro*, they, or these men.  
*Di coloro*, of them.  
*A coloro*, to them.  
*Da coloro*, from them.

Sing. { *Colei*, she or that woman.  
*Di colei*, of her.  
*A colei*, to her.  
*Da colei*, from her.

Plur.

Plur. { *Colòro*, they or those women.  
       { *Di colòro*, of them.  
       { *A colòro*, to them.  
       { *Da colòro*, from them.

*Colúi* and *coléi* applyed onely to persons, and also in a kinde of slighting way, as pointing at such a person.

Sing. { *Costúi*, this man.  
       { *Di costúi*, of this man.  
       { *A costúi*, to this man.  
       { *Da costúi*, from this man.

Plur. { *Costóro*, these men.  
       { *Di costóro*, of these men.  
       { *A costóro*, to these men.  
       { *Da costóro*, from these men.

Sing. { *Costéi*, this woman.  
       { *Di costéi*, of this woman.  
       { *A costéi*, to this woman.  
       { *Da costéi*, from this woman.

Plur. { *Costóra*, these women.  
       { *Di costóra*, of these women.  
       { *A costóra*, to these women.  
       { *Da costóra*, from these women.

Observe, that *costúi*, *colúi*, *costéi*, *coléi*, sometimes have no article of their own, but what belongs to the word following, as hath been said of *altrúi*, *Il costúi amore*, This man's love, that is, *L'amóre di quèsto*.

The love of this man. But this phrase is not civil, nor is it very frequent.

*Costui* and *Costei* are used onely to persons, and in a more slighting manner than *colui* or *colei*.

Sing. { *Cotestui*, this man.  
       { *Di cotestui*, of this man.  
       { *A cotestui*, to this man.  
       { *Da cotestui*, from this man.

Plur. { *Cotestoro*, these men.  
       { *Di cotestoro*, of these men.  
       { *A cotestoro*, to these men.  
       { *Da cotestoro*, from these men.

Sing. { *Cotestei*, this woman.  
       { *Di cotestei*, of this woman.  
       { *A cotestei*, to this woman.  
       { *Da cotestei*, from this woman.

Plur. { *Cotestoro*, these women.  
       { *Di cotestoro*, of these women.  
       { *A cotestoro*, to these women.  
       { *Da cotestoro*, from these women.

*Cotestui* and *cotestei* us'd as *costui* and *costei*.

Sing. { *Cotesto*, that man or thing.  
       { *Di cotesto*, of that man or thing.  
       { *A cotesto*, to that man or thing.  
       { *Da cotesto*, from that man or thing.

Plur.

Plur. { *Corésti*, these men or things.  
 { *Di corésti*, of these men or things.  
 { *A corésti*, to these men or things.  
 { *Da corésti*, from these men or things.

Sing. { *Corésta*, that woman or thing.  
 { *Di corésta*, of that woman or thing.  
 { *A corésta*, to that woman or thing.  
 { *Da corésta*, from that woman or thing.

Plur. { *Coréste*, these women or things.  
 { *Di coréste*, of these women or things.  
 { *A coréste*, to these women or things.  
 { *Da coréste*, from these women or things.

*Corésto corésta* us'd as *quésto quésta*.

*Corésti*, *quésti*, *quégli*, are oft us'd in a singular meaning; as *Corésti ancor vive*, He yet lives; *Corésti è quel tal capitano del qual vi ho parlato*, This is the Captain of which I have spoken to you of; *Quégli è forastiere pur anch' egli*, He is a stranger also.

*Quégli* and *quésti* are us'd in a singular signification, when two things are required, *quelli* relating to the first, *quelli* or *quégli* to the latter; *Giovanni & Andréa son iti in campagna*, John and Andrew are gone into the Countrey; *Quelli* or *quégli a cavallo*, *quésti a piedi*, The former on horseback, the latter on foot. The like of *quella* and *questa*, speaking in a feminine signification; *L'invidia e l'emulazione sono qualità molto differenti*, *quella è vizio questa virtù*, Envy and emulation are two different qualities, the former is a vice, the latter a virtue.

*Ciò* stands for *quello*, that; *questo*, this; as, *Non fate ciò*, Do not that; *Ciò mi dà martello*, This troubles me, or that troubles me.

Observe, that *questo* and *quella*, with the particle (*in*) before either, signifies as much as in the interim, or then when; as, *Lo schermidore in questo che riceve la botta fa la risposta*, The Fencer in that interim that he receives the blow or thrust, returns it, or strikes or thrusts again. *Il capitano in quella che vider entrar gl' inimici rimase confuso*, The Captain in the interim, or when he saw the enemies enter in, remain'd astonish'd.

Observe, that *il, del, al, dal*, is never joyned to *questo* or *quello*, nor *la, della, alla, d'alla*, to *questa* or *quella*.

## IV.

S. masc. { *Il quäle*, or *cui*, who, or which.  
*Del quäle*, of whom, or which.  
*Al quäle*, to whom, or which.  
*Dal quäle*, from whom, or which.

\* Plur. { *Li quali*, or *chi*, who or which.  
*Delli quali*, of whom or which.  
*Alli quali*, to whom or which.  
*Dalli quali*, from whom or which.

S. fem. { *La quäle*, who or which.  
*Della quäle*, of whom or which.  
*Alla quäle*, to whom or which.  
*Dalla quäle*, from whom or which.



Non  
trou-

article  
erim,  
icéve  
a that  
es or  
ntrár  
inte-  
d a-

qué-  
a or

Plur. { *Le quáli*, who or what.  
           { *Déle quáli*, of whom or which.  
           { *Alle quáli*, to whom or which.  
           { *Dálle quáli*, from whom or which. Being ap-  
 plied to persons or things indifferently.

Sing. m. { *Tále*, such an one.  
           { *Del tále*, of such an one.  
           { *Al tále*, to such an one.  
           { *Dal tále*, from or by such an one.

Plur. { *I*, or *li táli*, such ones.  
           { *De' táli*, of such ones.  
           { *A' táli*, to such ones.  
           { *Da' táli*, from or by such ones.

Sing. fem. { *La tále*, such an one.  
           { *Délla tále*, of such an one.  
           { *Alla tále*, to such an one.  
           { *Dálle tále*, from or by such an one.

Plur. { *Le táli*, such ones.  
           { *Déle táli*, of such ones.  
           { *Alle táli*, to such ones.  
           { *Dálle táli*, from or by such ones.

*Tále* with (a) signifies, to that pass; *E ridetto a tále*, He is brought to that pass.

*Tále*, many an one, or some one; as, *Tal ti baccia la máno che te la vorrébbe mózza*, Many an one, or some, kisses thy hand, that wish it cut off.

*Tále*, this body, or that body, when it is put with *quále*, *Non si láschia gabbàre né da tále né da quále*,  
 He

Le

suffers not himself to be abused by this body or that body.

Sing. { *'Eſſo*, he, self-same.  
           { *Di éſſo*, of him.  
           { *Ad éſſo*, to him.  
           { *Da éſſo*, from him, or by him.

Plur. { *'Eſſi*, they themselves.  
           { *Di éſſi*, of them.  
           { *Ad éſſi*, to them.  
           { *Da éſſi*, from them, or by them.

fem. { *'Eſſa*, she or her self.  
       Sing. { *Di éſſa*, of her.  
           { *Ad éſſa*, to her.  
           { *Da éſſa*, from her, or by her.

Plur. { *'Eſſe*, they themselves.  
           { *Di éſſe*, of them.  
           { *Ad éſſe*, to them.  
           { *Da éſſe*, from them, or by them.

Obſerve, that *éſſo* is elegantly placed with *con*, and *noi*, *voi*, *ſi loro*, *lei*, *Con éſſo noi*, Along with us; *Con éſſo voi*, Along with you; *Con éſſo loro*, Along with them; *Con éſſo lei*, Along with her; alſo, *Con éſſo me-co, te-co, ſe-co*, Together with me, thee, him, &c.

that

{ *Che*, who or which.  
 { *Di che*, of whom or which.  
 { *A che*, to whom or which.  
 { *Da che*, from whom or which, or by who or which.

{ *Cui*, who or which.  
 { *Di cui*, of whom or which.  
 { *A cui*, to whom or which.  
 { *Da cui*, from whom or which, or by whom or which.

Both these being indifferent either for number or gender.

{ *Il che*, which.  
 { *Del che*, of whom or which.  
 { *Al che*, to whom or which.  
 { *Dal che*, from whom or which, or by whom or which, indifferent to person or thing, so either be of the masculine gender.

V.

and  
us;  
with  
me-

{ *Chi*, who.  
 { *Di chi*, of whom, or whose.  
 { *A chi*, to whom.  
 { *Da chi*, from whom, or by whom, indifferent to either number or gender.

be,

*Che*,

{ *Che*, what.  
 { *Di che*, of what.  
 { *A che*, to what.  
 { *Da che*, from what, or by which, indifferent to  
 either number or gender, either of persons or things.

{ *Quale*, which, or what.  
 { *Di quale*, of which, or of what.  
 { *A quale*, to which, or what.  
 { *Da quale*, from which or what, or by which or  
 what; and so as hath been exemplified already; only  
 this is interrogatively, as speaking of two or more,  
*Quale volete dire*, Which do you mean?

## VI.

Sing. { *Altro*, another, masc. } Plur. { *Altri*, others.  
 { *Altra*, another, fem. } { *Altre*, others.

S. masc. { *L' altro*, the other.  
 { *Del altro*, of the other.  
 { *Al altro*, to the other.  
 { *Dal altro*, from the other, or by the other.

Plur. { *Gli altri*, the others.  
 { *Degli altri*, of the others.  
 { *Agli altri*, to the others.  
 { *Dagli altri*, from the others, or by the others.

Sing. fem. { *L' altra*, the other.  
 { *Dell' altra*, of the other.  
 { *All' altra*, to the other.  
 { *Dall' altra*, from the other, or by the other.

Plur.

Plur. { *Le àltre*, the others.  
           { *Dèlle àltre*, of the others.  
           { *Alle àltre*, to the others.  
           { *Dàlle àltre*, from the others.

{ *Altro*, any other man or thing.  
   { *D'altro*, of any other man or thing.  
   { *Ad altro*, to any other man or thing.  
   { *Da altro*, from any other man or thing, or by any other man or thing.

*Altri* is oft put in the singular, as signifying any one, any body; *Nissuno c'è v'è se altri non vuole*, None goes there unless one will.

*Altri* repeated, signifies some, or others; *Altri piangono, altri ridono*, Some weep, some laugh, or others weep, others laugh.

*Chi* signifies one, or any body, or a body; *Non si può, chi non volesse contravenire al precetto*, It cannot be, unless one, or a body, would oppose the command.

*Chi*, if repeated, signifies some; as, *Chi si scorruccia*, Some are angry; *Chi si gode*, Some are pleased; and is ever of the singular number, whereas *altri* doubled, is of the plural.

*Chi*, who, and *che*, what. *Non se chi egli si sia*, I know not who he is; *Ne che egli si faccia*, Nor what he is doing.

Masc. { *Qualch'uno*, } some one;  
           { *Qualc'una*, }

Fem. — *Qualc'una*,

Masc. { *Qualchedúno*, } some one.  
 Fem. *Qualchedúna*,

Observe, that nothing must be added to these words, as it were absurd to say, *Qualcún* or *qualchedún huómo*, *Qualcún* or *qualchedúna dónna*, *Qualcún cavállo*, or *Qualcúna cosa*.

Sing. masc. *Alcúno*, some one man,

Sing. fem. *Alcúna*, some one woman. Also they may be applied to things as well as persons.

Plur. masc. { *Alcúni*, some ones.  
*Alcúne*, some ones, referring either to persons or things,

Sing. m. { *Alcúno*, some one man or thing.  
*D' alcúno*, of some one man or thing.  
*Ad alcúno*, to some man or thing,  
*Da alcúno*, from some one man or thing, or by some one man or thing.

Plur. { *Alcúni*, some men or things.  
*D' alcúni*, of some men or things.  
*Ad alcúni*, to some men or things,  
*Da alcúni*, from or by some men or things.

Sing. f. { *Alcúna*, some woman or thing.  
*D' alcúna*, of some woman or thing.  
*Ad alcúna*, to some woman or thing.  
*Da alcúna*, from or by some woman or thing.

Plur.

fem. *Alcune*, some women or things.  
 Plur. *D'alcune*, of some women or things;  
*Ad alcune*, to some women or things.  
*Da alcune*, by some women or things.

*Ogn' uno*, every body, will have no addition, therefore beware of saying, *Ogn' un huomo*, Every man; *Ogn' un cavallo*, Every horse.

*Ciascuno*, masc. 2 Each, or every; may be without  
*Ciascuna*, fem. 3 addition, or with, as *Questo lo sa ciascuno*, Every body knows this; or, *Ciascun huomo sa questo*, Every man knows this.

*Ogni*, every, indifferent to person or thing, masculine, or feminine, and is ever in the singular number, except before numbers; as, *Ogni sei mesi*, Every six months, or *Ogni santi*, All Saints, the Feast so called.

*Ogni maggiore*; and *ogni qualunque*, is as much as to say, all possible, or all manner of; *Venite con ogni maggior prestezza*, Come with all possible diligence; *Lo farò con ogni qualunque strumento*, I'll do it with all, or any manner of instrument.

Observe, that putting *quanto*, *quanti*, or *quante*, as occasion serves, to either of them, you express all without the least exception, as *I quattrini che egli aveva*, *se gli è giocati tutti quanti*, The moneys he had, he hath play'd them all away to the last penny. *Egli venne dal giuoco di palla-corda tutto quanto sudato*, He came from the Tennis-Court all over in a sweat.

*Quanti* signifies as many as; *Gli fermarono quanti erano*, They staid them, or stop'd them, as many as there were of them.



F



Quanto

Plur.

*Quanto* alone, without addition, signifies as much as; *Di mandate quanto fa di bisogno*, Ask as much as is needfull.

*Alquanto* } signifies some; *alquanto tempo*, some  
*Alquanti* } time; *alquanti huomini*, some men; *al-*  
*Alquanta* } quanta gente, some people; *alquante*  
*Alquante* } case, some houses.

*Alquanto*, without addition; *Scà alquanto meglio*, He is somewhat better.

*Alquanto*, some, or a part of any thing; *Alquanto di pane*, a part or piece of bread.

*Quale* sometimes expresses a way of similitude; as *Egli qual filosofo arguto disputa*, He disputes like a cunning Philosopher.

*E te baccio le mani qual servitore humilissimo*, And I kiss your hands in the nature of your most humble servant.

Masc. *Nissuno*, }  
 } No one.  
 Fem. *Nissuna*,

Masc. *Veruno*, No one, or any one.

Fem. *Veruna*, No one, or any one, may be applyed either to persons or things; *Nissun cavaglièr più garbato*, No Gentleman more compleat; *Nissuna dama più leggiadra*, No Lady more accomplish'd; *Non c'è veruna cosa che stia bene così*, There is not any thing that is as it should be yonder.

Masc.



*Nulla*, } signifie nothing, or any thing; *Dico*  
*Niente*, } niente, I say nothing; *Volete niente*,  
 VWill you have any thing?

*Nullo*, as in English null, of no effect; *Il suo Testamento fu nullo*, His VWill and Testament was null, of no effect.

Observe, that *non* joyn'd to *nulla* or *niente*, denies the more; *Non voglio niente*, I will have nothing at all; *Non ho gustato niente a modo mio*, I have tasted nothing at all to my liking.

## VII.

*Ci*, to us; *gli*, to him or them; *la*, her or it; *le*, them, or to her, or to it; *li*, to him or them; *lo*, him or it; *mi*, to me, or me; *ne*, to us, or us; *si*, to himself, or himself; *ti*, to thy self, or thy self; *vi*, to your self, or your self. If either of these come before any words, they are written apart; if after, they are incorporated into the same word, the example will clear it; *Ci scrive*, he writes unto us; *Scrivete*, &c.

Observe, that if one command by way of forbiddance, then the particle precedes; as, *Non vi accostate più a questa casa per quanto vi è cara la vita*, Come no more near this house, as you tender your life; not *Non accostatevi*, &c. But if one invite or pray, then the particle is put after, and incorporated as aforesaid; as, *Accostatevi al fuoco*, Draw near to the

the fire; *il* signifying him, is put before words, not after; *Il viddi*, I saw him, not *viddi l*.

Observe, that when a word that is usually marked with an accent hath any of the aforesaid particles added unto it, or incorporated with it, instead of expressing the accent, the letter of the particle is doubled, and the accent omitted; *Lo farò*, I will or shall do it; *faròllo: mi amò*, he lov'd me, *amómmi*.

Observe, that when these particles are coupled together, they change into *e*, whether they come before the word, or after; *cóglierfela*, to steal away secretly, or slink, not *cóglierfila*; *se la cólse*, he stole away, not *si la cólse*.

*Anuedútofine*, being aware of it, not *anuedútofine*; *se n'annidde*, he was aware of it, not *si n'annidde*. See more to this purpose in the Table at the end of this Introduction.

# THE VERBS,

## I.

The Verb *'Eſſere*, to be.

P.

Sing. { *'Io ſono*, I am.  
*'Tu ſei*, thou art.  
*'Egli è*, he is.

Plur. { *Noi ſiamo*, we are;  
*'Voi ſete*, or *ſiete*, ye are;  
*'Eſſi ſono*, they are.

2.

Sing. { *'Io ero*, or *era*, I was.  
*'Tu eri*, thou waſt.  
*'Egli era*, he was.

Plur. { *Noi eramo*, or *eravamo*, we were.  
*'Voi eravate*, ye were.  
*'Eſſi erano*, they were.

3.

Sing. { *'Io ſono ſtato*, I have been.  
*'Tu ſei ſtato*, thou haſt been.  
*'Egli è ſtato*, he hath been.

F 3

Plur.

THE

Plur. { *Noi siamo stàti*, we have been.  
       { *Voi sète stàti*, ye have been.  
       { *Essi sòno stàti*, they have been.

4.

Sing. { *'Io fui*, I have been, or was.  
       { *Tu fosti*, thou hast been, or wast.  
       { *'Egli fu*, he hath been, or was.

Plur. { *Noi fummo*, or *fossimo*, we have been, or were.  
       { *Voi foste*, ye have been, or were.  
       { *'Essi furono*, they have been, or were.

5.

Sing. { *'Io era stàto*, I had been.  
       { *Tu eri stàto*, thou hadst been.  
       { *'Egli era stàto*, he had been.

Plur. { *Noi eravamo stàti*, we had been.  
       { *Voi eravate stàti*, ye had been.  
       { *'Essi erano stàti*, they had been.

6.

Sing. { *'Io fui stàto*, I had been.  
       { *Tu fosti stàto*, thou hadst been.  
       { *'Egli fu stàto*, he had been.

Plur.

Plur. { *Noi fúmmo*, or *fússimo státi*, we had been.  
*Voi foste státi*, ye had been.  
*'Essi fúrono státi*, they had been.

According to the persons who speak, so one may say, *státo*, *státi*, *státa*, *státe*.

7.

Sing. { *'Io sarò*, I shall or will be.  
*Tù sarai*, thou shalt or wilt be.  
*'Egli sarà*, he shall or will be.

Plur. { *Noi saremo*, we shall or will be.  
*Voi sarete*, ye shall or will be.  
*'Essi saranno*, they shall or will be.

8.

Sing. { *Sii tu*, be thou.  
*Sia egli*, be he, or let him be.

Plur. { *Siámo noi*, be we, or let us be.  
*Siáte voi*, be ye.  
*Siáno loro*, be they, or let them be.

9.

Sing. { *Dio voglia che*.  
*'Io sia*, God grant I be.  
*Che tu sia*, that thou.  
*Ch'egli sia*, that he be.

Plur.

F 4

Plur.

Plur. { *Che noi siámo*, that we be.  
*Che voi siáte*, that ye be.  
*Che essi siano*, that they be.

## 10.

Sing. { *Dio voléssé che*.  
*Io fóssi*, would God I were.  
*Tù fóssi*, thou wert.  
*Egli fósse*, he were.

Plur. { *Noi fóssimo*, we were.  
*Voi fóste*, ye were.  
*Essi fóssero*, or *fósseno*, they were.

## 11.

Sing. { *Fóssi' Io*, were I.  
*Fóssi' tù*, wert thou.  
*Fósse egli*, were he.

Plur. { *Fóssimo noi*, were we.  
*Fóste voi*, were ye.  
*Fóssero*, or *fósseno essi*, were they.

## 12.

Sing. { *'Io sarei*, or *sarìa*, I should be.  
*Tù sarésti*, thou should'st be.  
*'Egli sarèbbe*, he should be.

Plur.

Plur. { *Noi saremmo, or saremmo, we should be,*  
*Voi sareste, ye should be.*  
*Essi sarebbono, sarebbero, sarieno, they should be.*

## 13.

Sing. { *Dio voglia che,*  
*'Io sia stato, pray God I have been.*  
*Tu sia stato, thou have been.*  
*'Egli sia stato, he have been.*

Plur. { *Noi siamo stati, we have been.*  
*Voi siate stati, ye have been.*  
*'Essi siano stati, they have been.*

## 14.

Sing. { *Voleſſi fiddio che,*  
*'Io foſſi stato, would to God I had been.*  
*Tu foſſi stato, thou hadſt been.*  
*'Egli foſſe stato, he had been.*

Plur. { *Noi foſſimo stati, we had been.*  
*Voi foſſete stati, yee had been.*  
*'Eſſi foſſero stati, they had been.*

## 15.

Sing. { *'Io farei stato, I should or would have been.*  
*Tu fareſti stato, thou shouldſt or wouldſt have been.*  
*'Egli farebbe stato, he should or would have been.*

Plur.

Noi *saremmo*, or *saremmo stati*, we should or  
 would have been.  
 Plur. *Voi sareste stati*, ye should or would have  
 been.  
*Essi sarebbono stati*, they should or would have  
 been.

16.

Sing. *Quando Io sarò stato*, when I shall have been.  
*Tu sarai stato*, thou shalt have been.  
*Egli sarà stato*, he shall have been.

Plur. *Noi saremo stati*, we shall have been.  
*Voi sarete stati*, ye shall have been.  
*Essi saranno stati*, they shall have been.

17.

*'Essere*, to be.

18.

*Havere ad essere*, }  
*Essere per essere*, } to be about to be.  
*Dover essere*,

19.

*Essendo*, being.



20.

Stato, }  
Stati, } been  
Stata }  
State, }

21.

Essere stato, to have been

22.

Essendo stato, having been

23.

Havendo ad essere, }  
Essendo per essere, } being about to be.  
Dovendo essere, }

## II.

The Verb *Havere*, to have

I.

{ Io hò, I have.  
Sing. { Tu hai, thou hast.  
      { Egli hà, he hath

Plur. { *Noi habbiamo, or have, we have.*  
*Voi avete, ye have.*  
*Essi hanno, they have.*

2.

Sing. { *'Io havevo, or haveva, I had.*  
*Tu havevi, thou hadst.*  
*Egli aveva, he had.*

Plur. { *Noi havevamo, or haveamo, we had.*  
*Voi havevate, ye had.*  
*Essi havevano, they had.*

3.

Sing. { *'Io ho havuto, I have had.*  
*Tu hai havuto, thou hast had.*  
*Egli ha havuto, he hath had.*

Plur. { *Noi habbiamo havuto, we have had.*  
*Voi avete havuto, ye have had.*  
*Essi hanno havuto, they have had.*

According to the thing spoken, so may be said,  
*havuto, havuti, havuta, havute.*

4.

Sing. { *'Io hebbi, I had.*  
*Tu havesti, thou hadst.*  
*Egli ebbe, he had.*

Plur. { *Noi havemmo, or havessimo, we had.*  
*Voi haveste, ye had.*  
*Essi ebbero, they had.*

Sing.

5.

Sing. { *Io haveva havuto*, I had had.  
*Tu havevi havuto*, thou hadst had.  
*Egli haveva havuto*, he had had.

Plur. { *Noi havevamo havuto*, we had had.  
*Voi havevate havuto*, ye had had.  
*Essi havevano havuto*, they had had.

6.

Sing. { *Io hebbi havuto*, I had had.  
*Tu havesti havuto*, thou hast had.  
*Egli hebbe havuto*, he had had.

Plur. { *Noi havemmo, or haveſſimo havuto*, we had had.  
*Voi haveſte havuto*, ye had had.  
*Eſſi ebbero havuto*, they had had.

7.

Sing. { *Io haverò, haurò, harò*, I ſhall or will have.  
*Tu haverai, haurai, harai*, thou ſhalt or wilt have.  
*Egli haverà, haurà, haurà*, he ſhall or will have.

Plur. { *Noi haveremo, haurèmo, harèmo*, we ſhall or will have.  
*Voi haverete, haurète, harète*, ye ſhall or will have.  
*Eſſi haveranno, hauranno, hauranno*, they ſhall or will have.

Sing.

8.

Sing. { *Hàbbi tù*, have thou.  
           { *Hàbbia egli*, have he, or let him have.

Plur. { *Habbiàmo noi*, let us have.  
           { *Habbiàte voi*, have ye, or may ye have.  
           { *Hàbbiano essi*, may they have, or let them have.

9.

Sing. { *Dio vòglia che 'Io hàbbia*, God grant I have.  
           { *Tù hàbbia*, thou have.  
           { *Egli hàbbia*, he have.

Plur. { *Noi habbiàmo*, we have.  
           { *Voi habbiàte*, ye have.  
           { *Essi hàbbiano*, they have.

10.

Sing. { *Dio vorèsse che 'Io havèssi*, would God I had.  
           { *Tù havèssi*, thou hadst.  
           { *Egli havèsse*, he had.

Plur. { *Noi havèssimo*, we had.  
           { *Voi havèste*, ye had.  
           { *Essi havèssero*, they had.

11.

Sing. { *Havèssi 'Io*, had I,  
           { *Havèssi tù*, hadst thou,  
           { *Havèssi egli*, had he.

Plur.

Plur. { *Haveſſimo noi*, had we.  
           { *Haveſte voi*, had ye.  
           { *Haveſſero eſſi*, had they.

## 12.

Sing. { *Io haverei, haverà, havei*, I would or ſhould  
           { have.  
           { *Tu haverèſti, haverèſti, haverèſti*, thou would'ſt  
           { or ſhould'ſt have.  
           { *Egli haverèbbe, haverèbbe, haverèbbe, haveria,*  
           { *hauria, haria*, he ſhould or would have.

Plur. { *Noi haveremmo, haverèſſimo, haveremmo*, we  
           { ſhould or would have.  
           { *Voi haverèſte, haverèſte, haverèſte*, ye ſhould or  
           { would have.  
           { *Eſſi haverèbbono, haverèbbono, haverèbbono, have-*  
           { *rèbbero, haverèbbero, haverèbbero, haveriano, hav-*  
           { *riano, hariano*, they ſhould or would have.

## 13.

Sing. { *Dio vòglia che, Io hàbbia havuto*, God grant  
           { I have had.  
           { *Tu hàbbia havuto*, thou haſt had.  
           { *Egli hàbbia havuto*, he have had.

Plur. { *Noi habbiamo havuto*, we have had.  
           { *Voi habbiate havuto*, ye have had.  
           { *Eſſi habbiano havuto*, they have had.

## 14.

Sing. { *Voléſſe Iddio che 'Io havéſſi havúto*, would  
 God I had had.  
*Tù havéſſi havúto*, thou hadſt had.  
*'Egli havéſſe havúto*, he had had.

Plur. { *Noi havéſſimo havúto*, we had had.  
*Voi havéſſe havúto*, ye had had.  
*Eſſi havéſſero havúto*, they had had.

## 15.

Sing. { *I havréi havúto*. I ſhould or would have had.  
*Tù havréſſi havúto*, thou ſhouldeſt or wouldſt  
 have had.  
*'Egli havrébbe havúto*, he ſhould or would have  
 had.

Plur. { *Noi havrémmo*, or *havréſſimo havúto*, we  
 ſhould or would have had.  
*Voi havréſſe havúto*, ye ſhould or would have  
 had.  
*Eſſi havrébbono havúto*, they ſhould or would  
 have had.

## 16.

Sing. { *Quand' 'Io havrà havúto*. when I ſhall have  
 had.  
*Tù havrà havúto*, thou ſhalt have had.  
*'Egli havrà havúto*, he ſhall have had.

Plur.

to the Italian tongue.

81

Plur. { *Noi havrémo havúto*, we shall have had.  
*Voi havréte havúto*, ye shall have had.  
*'Essi havránno, havúto*, they shall have had.

17.

*Havére*, to have.

18.

*Havére ad havére*  
*èssere per havére* } to be about to have.  
*sovère havére.*

19.

*Havéndo*, having.

20.

*Havúto*  
*Havúti* } had.  
*Havúta*  
*Havúte*

21.

*Havére havúto*, to have had.

22.

*Havéndo havúto*, having had.

G

Hav

23.

*Havendo ad havere*  
*essendo per havere* } being about to have.  
*dovendo havere.*

## A Verb of the first Conjugation

1.

Sing. { *Io amo*, I love.  
*Tu ami*, thou lovest;  
*Egli ama*, he loveth.

Plur. { *Noi amiamo*, we love:  
*Voi amate*, ye love.  
*Essi amano*, they love.

2.

Sing. { *Io amavo*, or *amava*, I did love, or was loving.  
*Tu amavi*, thou didst love.  
*Egli amava*, he did love.

Plur. { *Noi amavamo*, we did love, or were loving.  
*Voi amavate*, ye did love.  
*Essi amavano*, they did love, or were loving.

Sing.



3.

Sing. { *Io hò amato*, I have lov'd.  
           { *Tù hai amato*, thou hast lov'd.  
           { *Egli hà amato*, he hath lov'd.

Plur. { *Noi habbiamo amato*, we have lov'd.  
           { *Voi havete amato*, ye have lov'd.  
           { *Essi hanno amato*, they have lov'd.  
           According to the thing spoken of, may be said,  
           *amato, amati, amata, amate.*

4.

Sing. { *Io amai* I lov'd.  
           { *Tù amasti*, thou lov'dst.  
           { *Egli amò*, he lov'd.

Plur. { *Noi amammo, or amassimo*, we lov'd.  
           { *Voi amaste*, ye lov'd.  
           { *Essi amarono, or amarono*, they loved.

5.

Sing. { *Io haveva amato*, I had lov'd.  
           { *Tù havevi amato*, thou hadst lov'd.  
           { *Egli haveva amato*, he had lov'd.

Plur. { *Noi havevamo amato*, we had loved.  
           { *Voi havevate amato*, ye had loved.  
           { *Essi havevano amato*, they had loved.

6.

Sing. { 'Io *kébbi amato*, I had loved.  
       *Tu havésti amato*, thou hadst loved.  
       *Egli hébbe amato*, he had loved.

Plur. { *Noi havéssimo amato*, we had loved.  
       *Voi havéste amato*, ye had loved.  
       *Essi hébbero amato*, they had loved.

7.

Sing. { 'Io *amerò*, I shall or will love.  
       *Tu amerai*, thou shalt or wilt love.  
       *Egli amerà*, he shall or will love.

Plur. { *Noi ameremo*, we shall or will love.  
       *Voi amerete*, ye shall or will love.  
       *Essi ameranno*, they shall or will love.

8.

Sing. { '*Amati*, love thou, or do thou love.  
       '*Ami egli*, let him love.

Plur. { '*Amiamo noi*, love we, or let us love.  
       '*Amate voi*, love ye.  
       '*Amino essi*, love they, or let them love.

Sing.

## 9.

Sing. { *Dio vòglia che 'Io ámi*, God grant I love.  
           *Tú ámi*, thou love,  
           *'Egli ámi*, he love.

Plur. { *Noi amiámo*, we love.  
           *Voi amiáte*, ye love.  
           *'Essi ámino*, they love.

## 10.

Sing. { *Dio voléffe che 'Io amássi*, would to God I did  
           love.  
           *Tú amássi*, thou didst love.  
           *'Egli amáffe*, he did love.

Plur. { *Noi amássimo*, we did love.  
           *Voi amáste*, ye did love.  
           *'Essi amássero*, they did love.

## 11.

Sing. { *Amássi 'Io*, did I, or should I love  
           *Amássi tú*, didst thou, or wouldst thou love.  
           *Amáffe égli*, did he, or would he love.

Plur. { *Amássimo noi*, did we, or would we did love.  
           *Amáste voi*, did ye, or would ye did love.  
           *Amássero éssi*, did they love, or would they did  
           love.

Sing.

## 13.

Sing. { *'Io amerè', or amerìa, I should, or would love.*  
*'Tù amerèsti, thou shouldst, or wouldst love.*  
*'Egli amerèbbe, or amerìa, he should, or would*  
*love*

Plur. { *Noi amerèmmo, or amerèssimo ; also amerìamo,*  
*we should, or would love.*  
*'Voi amerèste, ye should, or would love.*  
*'Essi amerèbbono, amerèbbero, amerìano, they*  
*would, or should love.*

## 13.

Sing. { *Dio vòglia che 'Io hàbbia amato, God grant I*  
*have loved.*  
*'Tù hàbbia amato, thou have loved.*  
*'Egli hàbbia amato, he have loved.*

Plur. { *Noi hàbbiamo amato, we have loved.*  
*'Voi hàbbiate amato, ye have loved.*  
*'Essi hàbbiamo amato, they have loved.*

## 14.

Sing. { *Volèsse Iddio che 'Io havèssi amato, would to*  
*God I had loved.*  
*'Tù havèssi amato, thou hadst loved.*  
*'Egli havèsse amato, he had loved.*

Plur.

Plur. { *Noi havéssimo amato*, we had lov'd.  
*Voì havéste amato*, ye had lov'd.  
*Essi havéssero amato*, they had lov'd.

15.

Sing. { *'Io havrei amato*, I would or should have lov'd.  
*Tù havresti amato*, thou wouldst, or shouldst have loved.  
*'Egli havrebbe amato*, he would, or should have loved.

Plur. { *Noi havremmo. or havréssimo amato*, we would or should have loved.  
*Voì havreste amato*, ye would or should have loved.  
*'Essi havrebbero amato*, they would, or should have loved.

16.

Sing. { *Quando 'Io havrò amato*, when I shall have loved.  
*Tù havrai amato*, thou shalt have loved.  
*'Egli avrà amato*, he shall have loved.

Plur. { *Noi havremo amato*, we shall have loved.  
*Voì havrete amato*, ye shall have loved.  
*'Essi avranno amato*, they shall have loved.

17.

*Amâre*, to love.

18.

*Havèr ad amâre*  
*ésser per amâre* } to be about to love.  
*dovèr amâre.*

19.

*Amândo*, loving.

20.

*Amâto*  
*Amâti* } loved.  
*An âta*  
*Amâte*

21.

*Havèr amâto*, to have loved.

22.

*Havèndo amâto*, having lov'd.

23.

*Havèndo ad amâre*  
*éssendo per amâre* } being about to love.  
*dovèndo amâre*

A Verb of the second Conjugation.

Sing. { *Io Gódo*, I enjoy.  
*Tù gódi*, thou enjoyest.  
*Egli góde*, he enjoyeth.

Plur. { *Noi godiámo*, we enjoy.  
*Voi godéte*, ye enjoy.  
*Essi gódono*, they enjoy.

2.  
Sing. { *Io godévo*, or *godéva*, or *godéa*, I did enjoy, or  
was enjoying.  
*Tù godévi*, thou didst enjoy, or wast enjoy-  
ing.  
*Egli godéva*, or *godéa*, he did enjoy, or was en-  
joying.

Plur. { *Noi godevámo*, or *godéamo*, we did enjoy, or  
was enjoying.  
*Voi godeváte*, yee did enjoy, or was enjoy-  
ing.  
*Essi godeváo*, or *godéano*, they did enjoy, or was  
enjoying.

3.  
*Io hó godúto*, I have enjoyed, &c.

Sing.

4.

Sing. { *Io godei*, I enjoyed.  
*Tù godésti*, thou enjoyedst.  
*Egli godette*, or *godè*, he enjoy'd.

Plur. { *Noi godémmo*, or *godéssimo*, we enjoyed.  
*Voi godéste*, ye enjoyed.  
*Essi godéttero*, they enjoyed.

5.

*Ihavéva godúto*, I had enjoyed.

6.

*Io hébbi godúto*. Idem.

7.

Sing. { *Io goderò*, *godrò* I shall, or will enjoy.  
*Tù goderai*, thou shalt, or wilt enjoy.  
*Egli goderà*, he shall, or will enjoy.

Plur. { *Noi goderémo*, or *godrémo*, we shall or will enjoy.  
*Voi goderéte*, or *godréte*, yee shall or will enjoy.  
*Essi goderámo*, or *godrámo*, they shall or will enjoy.

8.

Sing. { *Gódi tú*, enjoy thou, or do thou enjoy.  
*Góda égli*, enjoy he, or let him enjoy.

Plur.



Plur. { *Godiámo noi*, enjoy we, or let us enjoy.  
           { *Godéte voi*, enjoy ye.  
           { *Gódano éssi*, enjoy they, or let them enjoy.

9.  
 Sing. { *Dio vòglia che 'Io góda*, God grant I enjoy.  
           { *Tù góda*, thou enjoy.  
           { *Egli góda*, he enjoy.

Plur. { *Noi god'ámo*, we enjoy.  
           { *Voi god'áte*, ye enjoy.  
           { *'Essi gódano*, they enjoy.

10.  
 Sing. { *Dio voléssi che 'Io godéssi*, would God I did en-  
           { joy.  
           { *Tù godéssi*, thou didst enjoy.  
           { *'Egli godéffe*, he did enjoy.

Plur. { *Noi godéssimo*, we did enjoy.  
           { *Voi godéste*, ye did enjoy.  
           { *'Essi godéffero*, they did enjoy.

11.  
 Sing. { *Godéssi 'Io*, should I, or did I enjoy.  
           { *Godéssi tù* didst thou, or shouldst thou enjoy.  
           { *Godéffe égli*, did he, or should he enjoy.

Plur. { *Godéssimo noi*, did we, or should we enjoy.  
           { *Godéste voi*, did ye, or should ye enjoy.  
           { *Godéffero*, or *godéffono éssi*, did they, or should they enjoy.

Sing.

12.

*'Io goderei, or godereia, goderei, or godria, I should  
or would enjoy.*  
Sing. *Tu goderesti, goderesti thou shouldst, or wouldst  
enjoy.*  
*Goderèbbe, goderèbbe, godereia, godria, he should,  
or would enjoy.*

*Goderèmmo, goderèssimo, goderèmmo, goderèssimo,  
also goderiamo, and godriamo, we should, or  
would enjoy.*  
Plur. *Goderèste, goderèste, ye should, or would enjoy.*  
*Goderèbbono, goderèbbono, goderèbbero, goderèb-  
bero, goderiano, godriana, they should or  
would enjoy.*

13.

*Dio voglia che 'Io habbia goduto, God grant I have  
enjoy'd.*

14.

*Volèsse Iddio, che 'Io haveffi goduto, would to God  
I had enjoyed.*

15.

*Havei goduto, I would, or should have enjoyed.*

16.

*Quando 'Io havrò goduto, when I shall have en-  
joyed.*

17.

*Godére*, to enjoy ; though the vulgar sort of people  
oft say, *Gódere*.

18.

*Havère a godére*  
*èffer per godére*  
*dovèr godére* } to be about to enjoy.

19.

*Godèndo*, enjoying.

20.

*Godúto*  
*Godúti*  
*Godúta*  
*Godúte* } enjoyed.

21.

*Havèr godúto*, to have enjoyed.

22.

*Havèndo godúto*, having enjoyed.

23.

*Havèndo a godére*  
*èssendo per godére*  
*dovèndo godére* } being about to enjoy.

Another Verb of the same Conjugation,  
but of a different nature.

1.

Sing. { *Io cado*, I fall.  
          *Tu cadi*, thou fallest.  
          *Egli cade*, he falleth.

Plur. { *Noi cadamo*, we fall.  
          *Voi cadete*, ye fall.  
          *Essi cadono*, they fall.

2.

Sing. { *Io cadevo*, or *cadeva*, or *cadea*, I did fall, or, was  
          falling.  
          *Tu cadevi*, thou didst fall, or wast falling.  
          *Egli cadeva*, or *cadea*, he did fall, or was fall-  
          ing.

Plur. { *Noi cadevamo*, we did fall, or were falling.  
          *Voi cadevate*, ye did fall, or were falling.  
          *Essi cadevano*, or *cadeano*, they did fall, or  
          were falling.

3.

*Son caduto*, I have falne, or am fallen.

4.

Sing. { *Io caddi*, *cadei*, *cadetti*, I fell.  
          *Tu cadesti*, thou fell'st.  
          *Egli cadde*, *cadette*, he fell.

Plur.

Plur. { *Caddémmo, & caddéssimo*, we fell.  
*Cadéste*, ye fell.  
*Cáddero*, they fell.

5.  
*Io éra cadúto*, I had falln, or was fallen.

6.  
*Io fui cadúto*, idem.

Sing. { *Caderò, cadrò*, I shall, or will fall.  
*Caderai, cadrà*, thou shalt, or wilt fall.  
*Caderà, cadrà*, he shall, or will fall.

Plur. { *Caderemo, cadrèmo*, we shall, or will fall.  
*Caderete, cadrète*, ye shall, or will fall.  
*Caderanno, cadranno*, they shall, or will fall.

8.  
Sing. { *Cadi tù*, fall thou,  
*Càda egli*, let him fall.

Plur. { *Cadimo noi*, fall we, or let us fall.  
*Cadete voi*, fall ye.  
*Cádano essi*, fall they, or let them fall.

9.  
Sing. { *Dio voglia che 'Io càda*, God grant I fall.  
*Tù càda*, thou fall.  
*'Egli càda*, he fall.

Plur.

Plur.



An introduction

Plur. { *Noi cadiamo*, we fall.  
*Voi cadiate*, ye fall.  
*Essi cadano*, they fall.

10.

Sing. { *Dio volèsse che' Io cadessi*, would to God I fell.  
*Tu cadessi*, thou fell'st.  
*Egli cadèsse*, he fell.

Plur. { *Noi cadèssimo*, we fell.  
*Voi cadèste*, ye fell.  
*Essi cadèssero*, they fell.

11.

Sing. { *Cadessi' Io*, should I fall.  
*Cadessi tu*, shouldst thou fall.  
*Cadèsse egli*, should he fall.

Plur. { *Cadèssimo noi*, should we fall.  
*Cadèste voi*, should ye fall.  
*Cadèssero essi*, should they fall.

12

Sing. { *Caderei*, *cadrei*, *caderia*, *cadria*, I should, or  
would fall.  
*Caderèsti*, *cadrestì*, thou shouldest, or wouldst  
fall.  
*Caderèbbe*, *cadrebbe*, *caderia*, *cadria*, he should,  
or would fall.

Plur.

Caderemmo, cadrèmmo, caderiamo, cadriamo, we  
 should, or would fall.  
 Plur. { Cadereste, cadrèste, ye should, or would fall.  
 { Caderèbbero, cadrèbbero, caderiano, cadriano,  
 they should, or would fall.

13.  
 Dio voglia che 'Io sia caduto, God grant I have  
 fall'n.

14.  
 Volèsse Iddio che 'Io fossi caduto, would to God I  
 had fall'n.

15.  
 Sarei caduto, I should; or would have fall'n. 1

16.  
 Quando 'Io sarò caduto, when I shall have fall'n.

17.  
 Cadere, to fall.

18.  
 Havèr a cadere, }  
 "Esser per cadere, } to be about to fall.  
 Dovèr cadere.

19.  
 Cadendo, falling.

20.

*Cadúto*  
*Cadúti*  
*Cadúta*  
*Cadúte*

} fall'n

21.

*Esser cadúto*, to have fall'n.

22.

*Essendo cadúto*, being fall'n.

23.

*Havendo a cadere*  
*Essendo per cadere*  
*Dovendo cadere*

} being about to fall.

A Verb of the third Conjugation.

I.

*'Io pèrdo*, I lose,  
*Tù pèrdi*, thou losest.  
*Egli pèrde*, he loseth.

Sing. }

Plur.



Plur. { *Noi perdiâmo*, we lose.  
*Voi perdete*, ye lose.  
*Essi perdono*, they lose.

2.

Sing. { *Io perdévo*, or *perdéva*, I did lose, or was losing.  
*Tu perdévi*, thou didst lose.  
*Egli perdéva*, *perdéa*, he did lose.

Plur. { *Noi perdevâmo*, we did lose.  
*Voi perdevâte*, ye did lose.  
*Essi perdevano*, they did lose.

3.

*Io hò perdúto*, I have lost.

4.

Sing. { *Io perdéi*, *perdetti*, I lost.  
*Tu perdésti*, thou lostest.  
*Egli perdè*, *perdette*, he lost.

Plur. { *Noi perdémmo*, or *perdessimo*, we lost.  
*Voi perdéste*, ye lost.  
*Essi persero*, *perdettero*, they lost.

5.

*Io havéva perdúto*, I had lost.

6.

*Io hébbi perdúto*, idem.

7.

Sing. { *Io perderò perdrò, I shall, or will lose.*  
*Tù perderai, perdrà, thou shalt or wilt lose.*  
*'Egli perderà, perdrà, he shall, or will lose.*

Plur. { *Noi perderemo, perdrèmo, we shall, or will lose.*  
*Voi perderete, perdrète, ye shall, or will lose.*  
*'Essi perderanno, perdranno, they shall, or will lose.*

8.

Sing. { *Pèrdi tù, lose thou.*  
*Pèrda ègli, let him lose.*

Plur. { *Perdiàmo noi, lose we, or let us lose.*  
*Perdète voi, lose ye.*  
*Pèrdano èssi, lose they, or let them lose.*

9.

Sing. { *Dio voglia che 'Io pèrda, God grant I lose.*  
*Tù pèrda, thou lose.*  
*'Egli pèrda, he lose.*

Plur. { *Noi perdiàmo, we lose.*  
*Voi perdiàte, ye lose.*  
*'Essi pèrdano, they lose.*

10.

Sing. { *Dio volèsse che 'Io perdéssi, would to God I did*  
*or should lose.*  
*Tù perdéssi, thou didst lose.*  
*'Egli perdésse, he did lose.*

Plur.

Plur. { *Noi perdéssimo*, we did lose.  
*Voi perdéste*, ye did lose.  
*Essi perdéssero*, they did lose.

II.

Sing. { *Perdési* *Io*, should I lose.  
*Perdéstti*, shouldst thou lose.  
*Perdésse egli*, should he lose.

Plur. { *Perdéssimo noi*, should we lose.  
*Perdésste voi*, should ye lose.  
*Perdésseero essi*, should they lose.

12.

Sing. { *Perderei*, *perdreì*, *perderia*, *perdrìa*, I should, or  
would lose.  
*Perderésti*, *perdrésti*, thou shouldst, or wouldst  
lose.  
*Perderèbbe*, *perdrèbbe*; *perderia*, *perdrìa*, he  
should, or would lose.

Plur. { *Perderémmo*, *perdrémmo*, *perderéssimo*, *perdréssimo*,  
*perderiamo*, *perdrìamo*, we should, or  
would lose.  
*Perderéste*, *perdréste*, ye should, or would lose.  
*Perderèbbono*, *perdrèbbono*, *perderèbbero*, *perdrèbbero*,  
*perderiano*, *perdrìano* they should,  
or would lose.

13.

*Dio vòglia che' Io hàbbia perdúto*, God grant I have  
lost.

14.

*Dio voléssse che' Io havéssi perdúto*; would to God I  
had lost.

15.

*Havrei perdúto*, I should have lost.

16.

*Quando Io havrò perdúto*, when I shall have lost.

17.

*Pérdere*, to lose.

18.

*Havere a perdere,*  
*\*Esser per pèrdere,* } to be about to lose.  
*Dover perdere,* }

19.

*Perdèndo*, losing.

20.

*Perdúto*  
*Perdúti*  
*Perdúta*  
*Perdúte* } lost.

to the Italian tongue.

21.

*Havèr perdúto*, to have lost.

22.

*Havèndo perdúto*, having lost.

23.

*Havèndo a pèrdere*,  
*Essèndo per pèrdere*, } being about to lose.  
*Dovèndo pèrdere*,

---

A Verb of the fourth Conjugation.

I.

Sing. { *'Io sento*, I hear,  
*Tù senti*, thou hearest,  
*'Egli sente*, he heareth,

Plur. { *Noi sentiamo*, we hear.  
*Voi sentite*, ye hear.  
*'Essi sentono*, they hear.

2.

Sing. { *'Io sentivo*, or *sentiva*, I did hear; or was hear-  
ing.  
*Tù sentivi*, thou didst hear.  
*'Egli sentiva*, he did hear.

H 4

Plur.

**Plur.** { *Noi sentivamo*, we did hear.  
           *Vi sentivate*, ye did hear.  
           *Essi sentivano*, they did hear.

3.  
*Io ho sentito*, I have heard.

4.  
**Sing.** { *Io sentii*, I heard.  
           *Tu sentisti*, thou heardest.  
           *Egli sentì*, he heard.

**Plur.** { *Noi sentimmo*, or *sentissimo*, we heard.  
           *Vi sentiste*, ye heard.  
           *Essi sentirono*, they heard.

5.  
*Io avevo sentito*, I had heard.

6.  
*Io debbo sentito*, idem.

7.  
**Sing.** { *Io sentirò*, I shall, or will hear.  
           *Tu sentirai*, thou shalt, or wilt hear.  
           *Egli sentirà*, he shall, or will hear.

**Plur.** { *Noi sentiremo*, we shall, or will hear.  
           *Vi sentirete*, ye shall, or will hear.  
           *Essi sentiranno*, they shall, or will hear.

Sing.

8.

Sing. { *Senti tu*, hear thou.  
           *Senta egli*, let him hear.

Plur. { *Sentiamo noi*, hear we, or let us hear.  
           *Sentite voi*, hear ye.  
           *Sentano essi*, hear they, or let them hear.

9.

Sing. { *Dio voglia che 'Io senta*, God grant I hear.  
           *Tu senta*, thou hear.  
           *Egli senta*, he hear.

Plur. { *Noi sentiamo*, we hear.  
           *Voi sentiate*, ye hear.  
           *Essi sentano*, they hear.

10.

Sing. { *Dio volesse che 'Io sentissi*, would to God I  
           heard.  
           *Tu sentissi*, thou heardst.  
           *Egli sentisse*, he heard.

Plur. { *Noi sentissimo*, we heard.  
           *Voi sentiste*, ye heard.  
           *Essi sentissero*, they heard.

11.

Sing. { *Sentissi 'Io*, should I hear.  
           *Sentissi tu*, shouldst thou hear.  
           *Sentisse egli*, should he hear.

Plur.

*An introduction*

Plur. { *Sentissimo noi*, should we hear.  
*Sentiste voi*, should ye hear.  
*Sentissero essi*, should they hear.

12.

Sing. { *Sentirei*, or *Sentiría*, I should, or would hear.  
*Sentiresti*, thou shouldst, or wouldst hear.  
*Sentirebbe*, *sentiría*, he should, or would hear.

Plur. { *Sentiremmo*, *sentiressimo*, *sentiriamo*, we should,  
or would hear.  
*Sentireste*, ye should, or would hear.  
*Sentirebbono*, *sentirebbero*, *sentiriano*, they  
should, or would hear.

13.

*Dio voglia che 'Io habbia sentito*, pray God I have heard.

14.

*Dio voléssi che 'Io havéssi sentito*, would to God I had heard.

15.

*Havrei sentito*, I should, or would have heard.

16.

*Quando 'Io havrò sentito*, when I shall have heard.

17.

*Sentire*, to hear, as also to feel, smell, taste, perceive.



18.

*Havère a sentîre,*  
*Esser per sentîre,* } to be about to hear,  
*Dover sentîre,*

19.

*Sentêdo,* hearing.

20.

*Sentîto*  
*Sentîti* } heard,  
*Sentîta*  
*Sentîte*

21.

*Havér sentîto,* to have heard.

22.

*Havêdo sentîto,* having heard.

23.

*Havêdo a sentîre,*  
*Essêdo per sentîre,* } being about to hear,  
*Dovêdo sentîre,*

The irregular Verbs of the first Conjugation ; namely those Tenses wherein they are chiefly irregular conjugated all along ; the rest only hinted.

*The Verb dare to give, or strike.*

Sing. { 'Io dò, I give,  
 Tu dàs, thou givest.  
 Egli dà, he giveth.

Plur. { Noi dàmo, we give,  
 Voi date, ye give.  
 Essi danno, they give

2.

'Io davo, or dava, I did give, or was giving.

3.

'Io ho dato, I have given.

4.

Sing. { 'Io diédi, I gave.  
 Tu désti, thou gavest.  
 Egli diède, he gave.

Plur. { Noi dèmmo, or dèssimo, we gave.  
 Voi dèste, ye gave.  
 Essi dièdero, or dèttero, they gave.

'Io

5.

'Io *havéva dato*, I had given.

6.

'Io *hébbi dato*, idem.

7.

'Io *darò*, I shall, or will give.

8.

Sing. { *Dà tu*, give thou.  
*Dà egli*, give he, or let him give.

Plur. { *Diàmo noi*, give we, or let us give.  
*Dàte voi*, give ye:  
*Diano essi*, give they, or let them give.

9.

Sing. { 'O *che 'Io dà*, God grant I give.  
*Tù dà*, thou give.  
*'Egli dà*, he give.

Plur. { *Noi diàmo*, we give.  
*Voi diàte*, ye give.  
*'Essi diano*, they give.

10.

Sing. { *Dio voléffe che 'Io déssi*, would to God I  
gave.  
*Tù déssi*, thou gavest.  
*'Egli déffe*, he gave.

Plur.

Plur.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Noi déssimo, we gave,} \\ \text{Voi déste, ye gave.} \\ \text{Essi déssero, they gave.} \end{array} \right.$

11.

*Déssi' Io, should I give.*

12.

*Darei, I should, or would give.*

13.

*Dio voglia che Io habbia dato, pray God I have given.*

14.

*Dia volèsse che Io havéssi dato, would God I had given.*

15.

*Havrei dato, I should, or would have given.*

16.

*Quando' Io havró dato, when I shall have given.*

17.

*Dare, to give.*

18.

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Havere a dare,} \\ \text{'Essere per dare,} \\ \text{Dovero dare,} \end{array} \right\} \text{to be about to give.}$

19.

*Dádo*, giving.

20.

*Dáto,*  
*Dáti,*  
*Dáta,*  
*Dáte,* } given.

21.

*Havér dáto*, to have given.

22.

*Havéndo dáto*, having given.

23.

*Havéndo a dáre,*  
*Esséndo per dáre,*  
*Dovéndo dáre,* } being about to give.

The Verb *Stáre*, to dwell, stand, or be,

1. V.

Sing. { *Io stó*, I dwell.  
          { *Tù stai*, thou dwellest.  
          { *Egli stà*, he dwelleth.

Plur.

Plur. { *Noi stámo*, we dwell.  
       *Voi státe*, ye dwell.  
       *Essi stáno*, they dwell.

2.  
*'Io stávo*, or *stáva*, I did dwell, or was dwelling.

3.  
*'Io sòn státo*, I have dwelt.

4.  
 Sing. { *'Io stétti*, I dwelt.  
       *Tù stésti*, thou dwelt'st.  
       *'Egli stétte*, he dwelt.

Plur. { *Noi stémmo*, or *stéssimo*, we dwelt.  
       *Voi stéste*, ye dwelt.  
       *Essi stéttero*, they dwelt.

5.  
*'Io éra státo*, I had dwelt.

6.  
*'Io fui státo*. Idem. though these two Tenses in relation to this Verb are not very frequent.

7.  
*'Io starò*, I shall, or will dwell.

8.  
 Sing. { *Stà tù*, dwell thou.  
       *Sia egli*, let him dwell.

Plur.

Plur. { *St'amo noi*, dwel we, or let us dwel.  
*St'ate vi*, stand ye.  
*St'ano éssi*, dwel they, or let them dwel.

9.

Sing. { *O che 'Io st'ia*, God grant I dwel.  
*Tu st'ia*, thou dwel.  
*'Egli st'ia*, he dwel.

Plur. { *Noi st'amo*, we dwel.  
*Voi st'ate*, ye dwel.  
*'Essi st'ano*, they dwel.

10.

Sing. { *Dio voléss che 'Io stéssi*, would God I dwelt,  
*Tu stéssi*, thou dwelledst.  
*'Egli stéss*, he dwelt.

Plur. { *Noi stéssimo*, we dwelt.  
*Voi stéste*, ye dwelt.  
*'Essi stéssero*, they dwelt.

11.

*Stéssi 'Io*, dwelt I, or should I dwel.

12.

*'Io stares*, I should, or would dwel.

<sup>13.</sup>  
*Dio voglia che 'Io sia stato*, God grant I have dwelt.

<sup>14.</sup>  
*Dio volèsse che 'Io fossi stato*, would God I had dwelt,

<sup>15.</sup>  
*Sarei stato*, I should, or would have dwelt.

<sup>16.</sup>  
*Quando 'Io sarò stato*, when I shall have dwelt.

<sup>17.</sup>  
*Stare*, to dwell.

<sup>18.</sup>  
*Havere a stare,*  
*'Esser per stare,* } to be about to dwell.  
*Dover stare,*

<sup>19.</sup>  
*Stando*, dwelling.

<sup>20.</sup>  
*Stato,* }  
*Stati,* } dwelt: though something improper in Eng-  
*Stata,* } glish, as to a participle.  
*State,* }

*'Esser*



21.

*Esser státo*, to have dwelt.

22.

*Essendo státo*, having dwelt.

23.

*Essendo per stáre*,  
*Dovendo stáre*, } being about to dwell.  
*Havendo a stáre*,

The Verb *Fare*, to make, or doe.

1.

Sing. { *Io fà*, or *faccio*, I make.  
*Tù fai*, thou makest.  
*Egli fà*, he maketh.

Plur. { *Noi facciámo*, we make.  
*Voi fate*, ye make.  
*Essi fanno*, they make.

2.

Sing. { *Io facévo*, I did make, or was making.  
*Tù facévi*, thou didst make.  
*Egli facéva*, he did make.

1 2

Plur.

{ *Noi facevamo*, we did make.  
 Plur. { *Voi facevate*, ye did make.  
       { *Essi facevano*, they did make

3.  
*Io hò fatto*, I have made.

4.  
 Sing. { *Io feci*, I made.  
       { *Tù facesti*, thou mad'st.  
       { *Egli fece*, he made.

Plur. { *Noi facemmo*, or *facevamo*, also *femmo*, we  
       made.  
       { *Voi faceste*, ye made; or *faceste*.  
       { *Essi fecero*, they made; or *femmo*, or *fèro*.

5.  
*Io havéva fatto*, I had made.

6.  
*Io hebbi fatto*, idem.

7.  
*Io farò*, I shall or will make.

8.  
 Sing. { *Fàtù*, make thou.  
       { *Faccia egli*, let him make, or make he.

Plur. { *Facciàmo noi*, make we, or let us make.  
*Fàte voi*, make ye.  
*Fàcciano essi*, make they, or let them make.

9.  
 Sing. { *O che' Io faccia*, God grant I make.  
*Tù faccia*, thou make.  
*Egli faccia*, he make.

Plur. { *Noi facciàmo*, we make.  
*Voi facciate*, ye make.  
*Essi facciano*, they make.

10.  
 Sing. { *Dio voléssè che' Io facéssi*, would God I did  
 make.  
*Tù facéssi*, thou didst make.  
*Egli facéssè*, he did make.

Plur. { *Noi facéssimo*, we did make.  
*Voi facéste*, ye did make.  
*Essi facéssero*, they did make.

11.  
*Facéssi' Io*, did I make, or should I make.

12.  
*Fareì*, I should, or would make.

13.  
*Dio voglia che' Io habbia fatto*, pray God I have  
 made.

14.

*Dio volèſſe che 'Io havèſſi fátto,* would to God I  
had made.

15.

*Havrei fátto,* I ſhould or would have made.

16.

*Quándo 'Io havrò fúto,* when I ſhall have made.

17.

*Fàre,* to make.

18.

*Havèr a fàre,*  
*'Eſſer per fàre,* } to be about to make.  
*Dovèr fàre,* }

19.

*Facèndo,* making.

20.

*Fátto,*  
*Fátti,*  
*Fáta*  
*Fátte,* } made,

21.

*Havèr fátto,* to have made.

22.

*Havèndo fátto*, having made.

23.

*Havèndo a fare*,  
*Essèndo per fare*, } being about to make.  
*Dovèndo fare*.

The Verb *Andare* to go.

1.

Sing.	{	<i>Io vò</i> , or <i>vádo</i> , I go. <i>Tù vai</i> thou goest. <i>Egli và</i> , he goeth.	Plur.	{	<i>Noi andiámo</i> , we go. <i>Voi andáte</i> , ye go. <i>Essi vánno</i> , they go.
-------	---	--	-------	---	---

2.

*Io andávo*, I did go, or was going.

3.

*Io son andáto*, I have gone.

4.

*Io andái*, I went.

5.

*Io éra andáto*, I had gone.

6.

*Fui andáto*, idem.

7.

Sing.	{	<i>Io anderò</i> , or <i>andrò</i> , I shall, or will go. <i>Tù anderai</i> , <i>andrai</i> , thou shalt, or wilt go. <i>Anderà</i> , <i>andraà</i> , he shall, or will go.	Plur.
-------	---	---	-------

Plur. { *Anderemo, andremo*, we shall, or will go.  
*Anderete, andrete*, ye shall, or will go.  
*Anderanno, andranno*, they shall, or will go.

8.

Sing. { *Và tù*, go thou.  
*Vàda egli*, go he, or let him go.

Plur. { *Andiamo noi*, go we, or let us go.  
*Andate voi*, go ye.  
*Vadano essi*, go they, or let them go, also *Vadano*.

9.

Sing. { *O che 'Io vada*, God grant I go.  
*Tù vada*, thou go.  
*'Egli vada*, he go.

Plur. { *Noi andiamo*, we go.  
*Voi andate*, ye go.  
*'Essi vadano*, they go.

10.

*Dio volèsse che 'Io andassi*, would God I went;

11.

*Andassi 'Io*, should I go, or did I go.

12.

*Andrei, or Andrei*, I should or would go.

13.  
Dio voglia che 'Io sia andato, pray God I have gone.

14.  
Dio volèsse che 'Io fossi andato, would to God I had gone.

15.  
Sareì andato, I should or would have gone.

16.  
Quando 'Io sarò andato, when I shall have gone, or shall be gone.

17.  
Andare, to go.

18.  
Havèr ad andare, }  
'Effer per andare } to be about to go.  
Dovèr andare. }

19.  
Andando, going.

20.  
Andato, }  
Andati, } gone.  
Andata, }  
Andate, }

Esser

21.

*'Esser andato*, to have gone, or to be gone.

22.

*Essendo andato*, having gone, or being gone.

23.

*Havendo ad andare,*  
*Essendo per andare,* } being about to go.  
*Dovendo andare,*

The irregulars of the second Conjugation.

1. The Verb *dolere*, to grieve, or complain.

1.

Sing. { *Io dolgo*, or *doglio*, I grieve.  
*Tu duoli*, thou grievest.  
*Egli duole*, he grieves.

Plur. { *Noi dogliamo*, or *dolemo*, we grieve.  
*Voì dolete*, ye grieve.  
*Essi dogliono*, or *dogliono*, they grieve.

4.

Sing. { *'Io dol'fi*, I griev'd.  
*Tu dolé'fi*, thou griev'dst.  
*'Egli dol'se*, he griev'd.

Plur.



Plur. { *Noi dolémmo*, or *doléssimo*, we grieved.  
 { *Voi doléste*, ye grieved.  
 { *Essi dólsero*, they grieved.

7.  
*Io dolerò*, or *dorrò*, I shall, or will grieve.

8.  
 Sing. { *Dólgati*, or *dógliati*, grieve thou.  
 { *Dólgasi*, or *dógliasi*, grieve he, or let him grieve.

Plur. { *Dogliámoci*, grieve we, or let us grieve.  
 { *Dolétevi*, grieve ye.  
 { *Dógliansi*, or *Dólgansi*, grieve they, or let them grieve.

9.  
 Sing. { *Dio voglia che 'Io dólga*, or *dóglia*, God grant I grieve.  
 { *Tù dóglia*, or *dólga*, thou grieve.  
 { *'Egli dóglia*, or *dólga*, he grieve.

Plur. { *Noi dogliámo*, or *dolghiamo*, we grieve.  
 { *Voi dogtiáte*, or *dolghiáte*, ye grieve.  
 { *'Essi dógliano*, or *dólgano*, they grieve.

12.  
*'Io dolerèi*, or *dorrèi*, I should, or would grieve.

4. The Verb *Dovère* to ought, or to owe.

I.

*'Io débbo, or dévo, I ought, or owe.*  
 Sing. { *Tu dévi, thou oughtest.*  
*'Egli déve, or débbe, he oughteth.*

*Noi dobb'amo, dev'amo, or dovemo, we ought.*  
 Plur. { *Voi dovete, ye ought.*  
*'Essi devono, they ought.*

4.

*'Io dovetti, I ought, or owed.*  
 Sing. { *Tu doveſti, thou owedſt.*  
*'Egli dovette, he owed.*

*Noi dovemmo, or dovéſſimo, we ought, or owed.*  
 Plur. { *Voi doveſte, ye ought, or owed.*  
*'Eſſi dovéttero, they ought, or owed.*

7.

*Doverò, dovrò, I ſhall, or will owe.*

9.

*Dio voglia che 'Io débba, or déggia, God grant*  
 Sing. { *I owe.*  
*Tu débba, or déggia, thou owe.*  
*'Egli débba, or déggia, he owe.*

Plur.

Plur. { *Noi debbiámo, or deggiámo, we owe;*  
*Voi deggiáte, ye owe.*  
*'Essi déggiano, they owe.*

12.

*Io doverei, doverei, I should, or would owe.*

---

3. The Verb *Parére*, to seem:

1.

Sing. { *'Io páio, I seem.*  
*Tú pári, thou seemest.*  
*'Egli páre, he seemeth.*

Plur. { *Noi paiámo, we seem.*  
*Voi paréte, ye seem.*  
*'Essi páiono, they seem.*

4.

Sing. { *'Io páuri, or parsi, I seem'd.*  
*Tú parésti, thou seemest.*  
*'Egli páve, párse, he seem'd.*

Plur. { *Noi parémmo, paréssimo, we seem'd.*  
*Voi paréste, ye seem'd.*  
*'Essi pásero, pávero, they seem'd.*

7.

*Parerò parrò*, I shall, or will seem.

8.

Sing. { *Pàri tù*, seem thou.  
          { *Pàia égli*, let him seem.Plur. { *Paiàmo noi*, seem we, or let us seem.  
          { *Paréte voi*, seem ye.  
          { *Pàiano éssi*, let them seem, or seem they.

9.

Sing. { *Dio vòglia ch' Io pàia*, God grant I seem.  
          { *Tù pàia*, thou seem.  
          { *'Egli pàia*, he seem.Plur. { *Noi paiàmo*, we seem.  
          { *Voi paiàte*, ye seem.  
          { *'Essi pàiano*, they seem.

22.

*'Io parerei*, *parrei*, I should, or would seem.

4. The Verb *Pótere* to be able.

1.

Sing. { *'Io pòsso*, I can. or am able.  
*Tù puoi*, thou canst.  
*'Egli può*, *puóte*, *puóle*, *pó*, he can.

Plur. { *Noi possiámo*, *potiámo*, we can.  
*Voi potéte*, ye can.  
*'Essi pòssono*, or *póuno*, they can.

4.

Sing. { *Potei potétti*, I could.  
*Potésti*, thou couldst.  
*Potè*, or *potéte*, he could.

Plur. { *Potémmo*, or *potéssimo*, we could.  
*Potéste*, ye could.  
*Pótero*, *potétero*, *póterro*, they could.

7.

*Poterò*, *potró*, I shall, or will be able.

9.

Sing. { *Dio vóglia che 'Io pòssa*, God grant I be able.  
*Tù pòssa*, thou be able,  
*'Egli pòssa*, he be able.

Plur.

Plur. { *Noi possiámo*, we be able.  
       { *Voi possiáte*, ye be able.  
       { *Essi possáno*, they be able.

12.

*'Io poterei*, or *potrei*, I could, or should be able.

---

### 5. The Verb *Tenere* to hold.

1.

Sing. { *'Io ténego*, or *téno*, I hold.  
       { *Tù tiéni*; thou holdest.  
       { *Egli tiéne*, he holdeth.

Plur. { *Noi tegniámo*, we hold.  
       { *Voi tenéte*, ye hold.  
       { *'Essi téngono*, they hold.

4.

Sing. { *'Io tenni*, I held.  
       { *Tù tenésti*, thou heldst.  
       { *Egli ténne*, he held.

Plur. { *Noi tenémmo*, or *tenéssimo*, we held.  
       { *Voi tenéste*, ye held.  
       { *'Essi ténnero*, they held.

II.

*Io tenerò, or terrò, I shall, or will hold.*

8.

Sing. { *Tieni tu, hold thou.*  
*Tenga egli, let him hold, or hold he.*

Plur. { *Tegniámo noi, hold we, or let us hold.*  
*Tenete voi, hold ye.*  
*Tengano essi, hold they, or let them hold.*

7.

Sing. { *Dio voglia che 'Io tenga, God grant I hold,*  
*Tu tenga, thou hold.*  
*'Egli tenga, he hold.*

Plur. { *Noi tegniámo, we hold.*  
*Voi tegniáte, ye hold.*  
*'Essi tengano, they hold.*

12.

*Tenerèi, or terrei, I should, or would hold.*

The Verb *Volere*, to will,

I.

Sing. { *'Io vòglío, or vò, I will.*  
*Tu vuóli, thou wilt.*  
*'Egli vuóle, he will.*

Plur.

Plur. { *Noi vogli'amo*, we will.  
       { *Voi volete*, ye will.  
       { *'Essi vogliono*, they will.

Sing. { *'Io vòll', or vòl'si*, I would.  
       { *Tù volé'sti*, thou wouldst.  
       { *'Egli vòlle, or vòl'se*, he would

Plur. { *Noi volè'mmo*, or *volé'simo*, we would.  
       { *Voi volé'ste*, ye would.  
       { *'Essi vòl'sero, or vòl'tero*, they would.

7.  
*'Io vorrò*, I shall, or will be willing.

Sing. { *Dio vòglia che 'Io vògl'a*, God grant I be will-  
       ing.  
       { *Tù vògl'a*, thou be willing.  
       { *'Egli vògl'a*, he be willing.

Plur. { *Noi vogl'amo*, we be willing.  
       { *Voi vogli'ate*, ye be willing.  
       { *'Essi vògliano*, they be willing.

12.  
*'Io vorrèi*, I should, or would be willing.



7. The verb *Sapere*, to know.

1.

Sing. { *Io so*, I know.  
*Tu sai*, thou knowest.  
*Egli sa*, he knoweth.

Plur. { *Noi sappiamo*, we know.  
*Voi sapete*, ye know.  
*Essi sanno*, they know.

4.

Sing. { *Io seppi*, I knew.  
*Tu sapesti*, thou knewest.  
*Egli seppe*, he knew.

Plur. { *Noi sapémmo*, or *sapésimo*, we knew.  
*Voi sapéste*, ye knew.  
*Essi séppero*, or *seppmo*, they knew.

7.

*Io saprò*, I shall, or will know.

8.

Sing. { *Sappi tu*, know thou.  
*Sappia egli*, know he, or let him know.

Plur. { *Sappiamo noi*, know we, or let us know.  
*Sappiate voi*, know ye.  
*Sappiano essi*, know they, or let them know.

9.

Sing. { *Dio vòglia che 'Io sàppia*, God grant I know,  
           { *Tù sàppia*, thou know.  
           { *'Eglia sàppia*, he know.

Plur. { *Noi sappiamo*, we know.  
           { *Voi sappiate*, ye know.  
           { *Essi sappiano*, they know.

12.

*'Io saprei*, I should, or would know.

---

### 8. The Verb *Solère*, to be wont.

1.

Sing. { *'Io sòglio*, I am wont.  
           { *Tù suòli*, thou art wont.  
           { *Egli suòle*, he is wont.

Plur. { *Noi sogliamo*, we are wont.  
           { *Voi solète*, ye are wont.  
           { *Essi sògliono*, they are wont.

9.

Sing. { *Conciochè 'Io sòglia*, forasmuch as I am, or may  
           { be wont.  
           { *Tù sòglia*, thou art, or mayst be wont.  
           { *'Egli sòglia*, he is, or may be wont.

Plur

Plur. { *Noi sogliamo*, we are, or may be wont.  
*Voi sogliate*, ye are, or may be wont.  
*Essi sogliano*, they are, or may be wont.

20.

*Sólito*, wont.

9. The Verb *Capere*, to hold, or contain;  
 or to be held, or contain'd.

I.

Sing. { *Io cáppio*, I hold, or am contain'd.  
*Tù cápi*, thou art contain'd.  
*Egli cape*, he is contain'd.

Plur. { *Noi cappiamo*, we are contain'd.  
*Voi capete*, ye are contain'd.  
*Essi cáppiono*, or *cáppono*, they are contain'd.

4.

Sing. { *Io capèi*, I was contain'd.  
*Tù capèsti*, thou wast contain'd.  
*Egli capè*, he was contain'd.

Plur. { *Noi capémmo*, or *capéssimo*, wee were contain'd.  
*Voi capéste*, ye were contain'd.  
*Essi capérono*, they were contain'd.

K 3

Cap

20.

*Capito*, or *capito*, contain'd.10. The Verb *Giacere*, to lye down.

1.

Sing. { *'Io giaccio*, I lye down.  
           { *Tù giaci*, thou liest down.  
           { *'Egli giace*, he lieth down.

Plur. { *Nei giacciamo*, we lye down.  
           { *Voi giacete*, ye lye down.  
           { *'Essi giacciono*, they lie down

4.

Sing. { *'Io Giacqui*, I lay down.  
           { *Tù giacesti*, thou layst down  
           { *'Egli giacque*, he lay down.

Plur. { *Nei giaccemmo*, or *giaccéssimo*, we lay down.  
           { *Voi giaccéste*, ye lay down.  
           { *'Essi giacquero*, they lay down.

30.

*Giaccuto*, layn down.

11. The Verb *Tacere*, to be silent.

1.

Sing. { 'Io *taccio*, I am silent.  
'Tu *taci*, thou art silent.  
'Egli *tace*, he is silent.

Plur. { Noi *tacciamo*, we are silent.  
'Voi *tacete*, ye are silent.  
'Essi *tacciono*, they are silent.

4.

Sing. { 'Io *tacqui*, I was silent.  
'Tu *tacesti*, thou wast silent.  
'Egli *tacque*, he was silent.

Plur. { Noi *tacemmo*, or *tacéssimo*, we were silent.  
'Voi *tacéste*, ye were silent.  
'Essi *tacquero*, they were silent.

20.

*Tacito*, held silent.

K 4

12. The

12. The Verb *Piacere*, to please

1.

Sing. { *Io piaccio*, I please.  
           *Tu piaci*, thou pleasest.  
           *Egli piace*, he pleaseth.

Plur. { *Noi piacciamo*, we please.  
           *Voi piacete*, ye please.  
           *Essi piacciono*, they please.

4.

Sing. { *Io piacquì*, I pleas'd.  
           *tu piacesti*, thou pleas'dst.  
           *Egli piacque*, he pleas'd

Plur. { *Noi piacemmo*, we pleas'd.  
           *Voi piaceste*, ye pleas'd.  
           *Essi piacquero*, they pleas'd.

20.

*Piaciuto*, pleas'd.

13. The Verb *Rimanere* to remain.

1.

Sing. { *'Io rimango*, I remain.  
*'Tu rimani*, thou remainest.  
*'Egli rimane*, he remaineth.

Plur. { *Noi rimaniamo*, or *rimanemo*, we remain.  
*Voi rimanete*, ye remain.  
*'Essi rimangono*, they remain.

4.  
 Sing. { *'Io rimasi*, I remain'd.  
*'Tu rimanesti*, thou remain'dst.  
*'Egli rimase*, he remain'd.

Plur. { *Noi rimanemmo*, or *rimanessimo*, we remain'd.  
*Voi rimaneste*, ye remain'd.  
*'Essi rimasero*, they remain'd.

7.

*'Io rimarrò*, I shall or will remain.

9.

Sing. { *Dio voglia che 'Io rimanga*, God grant I re-  
 main.  
*'Tu rimanga*, thou remain.  
*'Egli rimanga*, he remain.

Plur.

Plur. { *Noi rimaniámo*, we remain.  
       *Vì rimaniáte*, ye remain.  
       *'Essi rimángano*, they remain.

12.

*'Io rimarrei*, I should, or would remain.

20.

*Rimáso*, or *rimásto*, remained.

#### 14. The Verb *Valère*, to be worth.

1.

Sing. { *'Io válgo*, or *váglio*, I am worth.  
       *T'ù váli*, thou art worth.  
       *'Egli vále*, he is worth.

Plur. { *Noi vagliámo*, we are worth.  
       *Vì valéte*, ye are worth.  
       *'Essi vágliano*, or *válgono*, they are worth.

4.

Sing. { *'Io válf*, I was worth.  
       *T'ù valésti*, thou wast worth.  
       *'Egli válse*, he was worth.

Plur.



Plur. { *Noi valémmo*, or *valéssimo*, we were worth.  
*Voi valéste*, ye were worth.  
*Essi válsero*, they were worth.

7.  
*Io valerò*, or *varrò*, I shall, or will be worth.

9.  
 Sing. { *Dio vòglia che 'Io vágli*, or *válga*, God grant I  
 be worth.  
*Tù vágli*, or *válga*, thou be worth.  
*'Egli vágli*, or *válga*, he be worth.

Plur. { *Noi vagliámo*, we be worth.  
*Voi vagliáte*, ye be worth.  
*'Essi vagliano*, or *válgano*, they be worth.

12.  
*Io valerèi*, or *varrei*, I would, or should be worth.

15. The Verb *Sedére*, to sit.

1.

Sing. { *Io sèggo*, or *séggio*, I sit.  
*Tu siedi*, thou sittest.  
*'Egli siede*, he sitteth.

Plur.

Plur. { *Noi sediamo, or sedgiamo, we sit.*  
*Voi sedete, ye sit.*  
*Essi seggono, or siédono, they sit.*

Sing. { <sup>4.</sup>  
*'Io sedeì, or sedètti, I fate.*  
*Tù sedèsti, thou fatest.*  
*Egli sedette, he fate.*

Plur. { *Noi sedemmo, or sedéssimo, we fate.*  
*Voi sedeste, ye fate.*  
*Essi sedettero, or sedieno, they fate.*

<sup>7.</sup>  
*'Io sederò, or sedrò, I shall, or will sit.*

Sing. { <sup>8.</sup>  
*Sié di tù, sit thou.*  
*Ségga, or siéda égli, sit he, or let him sit.*

Plur. { *Sediamo, or sedgiamo noi, sit we, or let us sit.*  
*Sedete voi, sit ye.*  
*Séggano, or siédano éssi, sit they, or let them sit.*

<sup>9.</sup>  
*Dio vèglia che 'Io ségga, or séggia, or siéda, God grant I sit; as number 8. &c.*

12.

*To sedere*, or *sedere*, I should, or would, or could sit.

Observe, that where the numbers doe not follow but skip, there they are regular, and follow the Infinitive at number 17. as in the Verb *dolere*, *dolere* is not exprest, which should be number 2. in regard it is regular from *dolere*: And so of the rest, for brevities sake.

---

Irregulars of the third Conjugation, viz. at number 4. 20. 9. usually, though not in all punctually.

17. *Ardere* to burn, 1 *árdo* I burn, 4 *ársi* I burnt, 20 *árso* burnt, 9 *árda* may I burn.
17. *Accorgere* to perceive, 1 *accórgo*, I perceive, 4 *accórsi* I perceiv'd, 20 *accórto* perceiv'd, 9 *accórga* may I perceive.
17. *Accrescere* to augment, 1 *accrésco*, I augment, 4 *accrébbi* I augmented, 20 *accresciuto* augmented, 9 *accrésca* may I augment.
17. *Accendere* to kindle, 1 *accéndo* I kindle, 4 *accési* I kindled, 20 *accéso* kindled, 9 *accénda* may I kindle.
17. *Accogliere* to gather, 1 *accólgo* I gather, 4 *accólfi* I gather'd, 20 *accólto* gather'd, 9 *accólga* may I gather.
17. *Affliggere* to afflict, 1 *affliggo* I afflict, 4 *afflissi* I afflicted,

- afflicted, 20 *afflitto* afflicted, 9 *affligga* may I af-  
 flict.  
 17 *Ammettere* to admit, 1 *ammétto* I admit 4 *amméssi*  
 I admitted, 20 *amméssò* admitted, 9 *ammétta*  
 may I admit.  
 17 *Appendere* to hang up, 1 *appéndo* I hang up, 4 *appéssi*  
 I hung up, 9 *appénda* may I hang up.  
 17 *Ascondere* to hide, 1 *ascóndo* I hide, 4 *ascóssi* I hid,  
 20 *ascósto* hidden, 9 *ascónda* may I hide.  
 17 *Ascendere* to ascend, 1 *ascéndo* I ascend, 4 *ascéssi* I  
 ascended, 20 *ascéso* ascended, 9 *ascénda* may I a-  
 scen.  
 17 *Assumere* to assume, 1 *assúmo* I assume, 4 *assússi* I  
 assumed, 20 *assúnto* assumed, 9 *assúma* may I as-  
 sume.  
 17 *Astringere* to bind, 1 *astríngo* I bind, 4 *astrínssi* I  
 bound, 20 *astrétto* bound, 9 *astrínga* may I bind.  
 17 *Absolvere* to absolve, 1 *assólvo* I absolve, 4 *assólssi* I ab-  
 solv'd, 20 *assólto* absolv'd, 9 *assólva* may I ab-  
 solve.  
 17 *Atendere* to mind, 1 *atténdo* I mind 4 *attéssi* I mind-  
 ed, 20 *attéso* minded, 9 *atténda* may I mind.  
 17 *Avvincere* to bind, 1 *avvínco* I bind, 4 *avvínssi* I  
 bound, 20 *avvínco* bound, 9 *avvínca* may I bind.  
 17 *Battere* to beat, 1 *bátto* I beat, 4 *battéssi* & *battétti* I  
 did beat, 20 *battúto* beaten, 9 *bátta* may I beat.  
 17 *Bevere* to drink, 1 *bévo* I drink, 4 *bevevi*, or *bébbi*,  
 I drank, 20 *bevúto* drunk, 9 *béva*, may I drink.  
 17 *Cedere* to yeeld, 1 *cédo* I yeeld, 4 *cedéssi*, or *cedétti*,  
 I yeelded, 20 *cedúto* yeelded, 9 *céda* may I yeeld.  
 17 *Chiedere* to ask, 1 *chiédó* I ask, 4 *chiéssi* I askt, 20  
*chiésto* asked, 9 *chiédí*, or *chiégga* may I ask  
 17 *Chiudere* to shut, 1 *chiúdo* I shut up, 4 *chiússi* I did  
 shut

shut up, 20 *chiúso* shut up, 9 *chiúda* may I shut up.

17 *Cíngere* to gird, 1 *cíngo*, or *cíño* I gird, 4 *cínsi* I girded, 20 *cínto* girded, 9 *cínga*, or *cigna* may I gird.

17 *Cógliere*, or *córre* to gather, 1 *cólgo*, or *cóglio* I gather, 4 *cólfi* I gathered, 20 *cólto* gathered, 9 *cólga* may I gather.

17 *Concedere* to grant, 1 *concédo* I grant, 4 *concéssi* I granted, 20 *concéssó* granted, or *concedúto*, 9 *concéda* may I grant.

17 *Conchiudere* to conclude, as *chiudere*.

17 *Condúcere*, or *condúrre* to conduct, as *dúcere*.

17 *Conoscere* to know, 1 *conósco* I know, 4 *conóbbi* I knew, 20 *conosciúto* known, 9 *conósca* may I know.

17 *Costringere* to constrain, as *stringere*.

17 *Confondere* to confound, 1 *confódo* I confound, 4 *confúsi* I confounded, 20 *confúso* confounded, 9 *confóna*, may I confound.

17 *Conténdere* to contest, as *téndere*.

17 *Convertere* to convert, 1 *convérto* I convert, 4 *convérsi* I converted, 20 *convérso* converted, 9 *convérta*, may I convert.

17 *Correre* to run, 1 *córro* I run, 4 *córsi* I ran, 20 *córso* ran, 9 *córra* may I run.

17 *Créscere* to grow, 1 *eréscó* I grow, 4 *crébbi* I grew, 20 *cresciúto* grown, 9 *créscá* may I grow.

17 *Crocfiggere* to crucify, as *figgere*.

17 *Cuócere* to cook, *cuóco* I cook, 4 *cóssi* I cook'd, 20 *cóto* cook'd, 9 *cuóca* may I cook.

17 *Distrúggere* to destroy, as *strúggere*.

17 *Dífendere* to defend, as *féndere*.

17 *Diffondere* to diffuse, as *fondere*.

17 Di-

- 17 *Dicidere* to decide, 1 *decido* I decide, 4 *decisi* I decided, 20 *deciso* decided, 9 *decida* may I decide.
- 17 *Disponere*, or *disporre* to dispose, as *ponere*, *porre*.
- 17 *Dividere* to divide, 1 *divido* I divide, 4 *divisi* I divided, 20 *diviso* divided, 9 *divida* may I divide.
- 17 *Ducere*, or *durre* to lead, 1 *duco* I lead, 4 *duxi* I led, 20 *ducto* led, 9 *duca* may I lead.
- 17 *Eleggere* to elect, 1 *elègo* I elect, 4 *elèxi* I elected, 20 *elètto* elected, 9 *elègga* may I elect.
- 17 *Ergere* to erect, 1 *èrgo* I erect, 4 *èrxi* I erected, 20 *èrto* erected, 9 *èrga* may I erect.
- 17 *Escludere* to exclude, 1 *esclúdo* I exclude, 4 *esclúsi* I excluded, 20 *esclúso* excluded, 9 *esclúda* may I exclude.
- 17 *Esprimere* to express, 1 *esprímo* I express, 4 *espréssi* I expressed, 20 *espréssso* expressed, 9 *espríma* may I express.
- 17 *Estinguere* to extinguish, 1 *estínguo* I extinguish, 4 *estínsi* I extinguished, 20 *estínto* extinguished, 9 *estíngua* may I extinguish.
- 17 *Fendere* to cleave, 1 *fèndo* I cleave, 4 *féxi* I clove, 20 *fèso* cleft or cloven, 9 *fènda* may I cleave.
- 17 *Figgere* to fasten, 1 *fíggio* I fasten, 4 *físsi* I fastened, 20 *físsso*, or *fíttto* fastened, 9 *fíggga* may I fasten.
- 17 *Fingere* to feign, 1 *fíngo* I feign, 4 *fínsi* I feigned, 20 *fíntto* feigned, 9 *fíngga* may I feign.
- 17 *Frangere* to break, 1 *frángo* I break, 4 *fránsi* I brake, 20 *frántto* broke, 9 *fránga* may I break.
- 17 *Frémere* to fret, 1 *frémo* I fret, 4 *frémei* I fretted, 20 *frémúto* fretted, 9 *fréma* may I fret.
- 17 *Gémere* to groan, 1 *gèmo* I groan, 4 *gèmei* I groan'd, 20 *gèmtto* groan'd, 20 *gèma* may I groan.

17 *Giugnere*, or *giungere* to arrive, 1 *giungo*, or *giugno*, I arrive, 4 *giunsi* I arrived, 20 *giunto* arrived, 9 *giunga*, or *giugna* may I arrive.

17 *Imprimere* to imprint, as *esprimere*.

17 *Immergere* to drown, 1 *Immergo* I drown, 4 *Immersi* I drown'd, 20 *immerso* drown'd, 9 *immerga* may I drown, or be drown'd.

17 *Inducere* to induct, as *ducere*.

17 *Intendere* to understand, as *tendere*.

17 *Intridere* to bruise, 1 *intrido* I bruise, 4 *intrisi* I bruise'd, *intriso* bruised, 9 *intrida* may I bruise.

17 *Involgere* to involve, as *volgere*.

17 *Leggere* to read, 1 *Léggo* J read, 4 *Léssi* J read, 20 *létto* read, 9 *légga* may I read.

17 *Mettere* to put, 1 *métto* I put, 4 *mísi* J put, 20 *méssó* put, 9 *métta* may J put.

17 *Mescere* to mingle, 1 *mescio* I mingle, 4 *mescei* J mingled, 20 *mesciúto* mingled, 9 *mescia* may J mingle.

17 *Mietere* to reap, 1 *miéto* J reap, 4 *mietei* J reapt, 20 *mietúto* reapt, 9 *miéta* may I reap.

17 *Mordere* to bite, 1 *mórdo* J bite, 4 *mordei*, or *mórsi* J bit, 20 *mórso*, or *mordúto* bitten, 9 *mórda* may J bite.

17 *Móngere* to milk, 1 *móngo* I milk, 4 *mónsi* I milke, 20 *mónto* milkt, 9 *mónga* may I milk.

17 *Muovere* to move, 1 *muóvo* I move, 4 *móssi* I moved, 20 *móssó* moved, 9 *muóva* may I move.

17 *Nascere* to grow, or be born, 1 *násco* J grow, 4 *náqui* I grew, 20 *náto* grown or born, 9 *násca* may I grow.

17 *Nascondere* to hide, *nascóndo* I hide, 4 *nascósi* I hid, 20 *Nascóse*, *nascósto* hidden, 9 *nascónda* may I hide.

- 17 *Nuocere* to hurt, 1 *nuoco* I hurt, 4 *nocqui* I did hurt, 20 *nocciuto* hurt, 9 *nuoca* may I hurt.
- 17 *Offendere* to offend, as *fendere*.
- 17 *Opprimere* to oppress, as *esprimere*.
- 17 *Pascere* to feed, 1 *pasco* I feed, 4 *pascai* I fed, 20 *pasciuto* fed, 9 *pasca* may I feed.
- 17 *Pendere* to hang, 1 *pendo* I hang, 4 *pesi* I hung, 20 *peso* hung, 9 *pendi* may I hang.
- 17 *Percutere* to strike, 1 *percuoto* I strike, 4 *percossi* I strook, 20 *percosso* stricken, 9 *percuota* may I strike.
- 17 *Perdere* to lose, 1 *perdo* I lose, 4 *perdei* or *persi* I lost, 20 *perso* or *perduto* lost, 9 *perda* may I lose.
- 17 *Piangere* or *piagnere* to weep, 1 *piango* or *piagno* J weep, 4 *piansi* I wept, 20 *pianto* wept, 20 *pianga* or *piagna* may J weep.
- 17 *Pingere* or *pignere* to paint, 1 *pingo* or *pigno* J paint, 4 *pinsi* I painted, 20 *pinto* painted, 9 *pinga* or *pigna* may J paint.
- 17 *Piovvere* to pour down, or rain, 1 *piovo* I pour down, &c. 4 *piobbi* I pour'd down, &c. 20 *piovuto* poured, &c. 9 *piova* may I pour, &c.
- 17 *Ponere* or *porre* to put, 1 *pongo* or *pugno* I put, 4 *posi* J put, 20 *posto* put, 9 *pogna* or *ponga* may J put.
- 17 *Porgere* to offer, 1 *porgo* J offer, 4 *porfi* J offer'd, 20 *porto* offered, 9 *porga* may J offer.
- 17 *Præmere* to press, 1 *præmo* J press, 4 *præssi* or *premeri* J press, 20 *præssio* or *præmuto* press, 9 *præma* may I press.
- 17 *Prædere* to take, 1 *prændo* J take, 4 *præsi* J took, 20 *præso* took, 9 *prænda* may J take.
- 17 *Præsumere* to presume, 1 *præsumo* J presume, 4 *præsonsi* J presumed, 20 *præsonto* presum'd, 9 *præsuma* may I presume.



- 17 *Promettere* to promise, as *mettere*.  
 17 *Proteggere* to protect, 1 *protéggo* I protect, 4 *protéssi* I protected, 20 *protétto* protected, 9 *protéggo* may I protect.  
 17 *Rádere* to have, 1 *rádo* I have, 4 *rás* I hav'd, 20 *rásó* shaw'd, 9 *rádú* may I have.  
 17 *Réggere* to govern, 1 *réggo* I govern, 4 *rési* I governed, 20 *réttó* governed, 9 *réggo* may I govern.  
 17 *Réndere* to render, 1 *réndo* I render, 4 *rési* I rendr'd, 20 *résó* readr'd, 9 *réndú* may I render.  
 17 *Ridere* to laugh, 1 *rído* I laugh, 4 *rís* I laught, 20 *rísó* laught, 9 *rídú* may I laugh.  
 17 *Riflettere* to reflect, 1 *riflétto* I reflect 4 *rifléssi* I reflected, 20 *rifléssó* reflected, 9 *rifléttú* may I reflect.  
 17. *Rilúcere* to shine, 1 *rilúco* I shine, 4 *rilússi* I did shine, 20 *rilúttó* shined, 9 *rilúcu* may I shine.  
 17 *Ricévere* to receive, 1 *ricétto* I receive, 4 *ricéveti* I received, 20 *ricevúto*, & *ricétto* received, 9 *ricévu* may I receive.  
 17 *Rispondere* to answer, 1 *rispóndo* I answer, 4 *rispóssi* I answered, 20 *rispóttó* answered, 9 *rispóndú* may I answer.  
 17 *Risolvere* to resolve, 1 *risólvó* I resolve, 4 *risólví* I resolved, 20 *risólváto* resolved, 9 *risólvú* may I resolve.  
 17 *Risorgere* to rise again, as *sorgere*.  
 17 *Rispléndere* to shine, as *spléndere*.  
 17 *Rompere* to break, 1 *rómpo* I break, 4 *rúppi* I brake, 20 *róttó* broken, 9 *rómpu* may I break.  
 17 *Ritráere*, or *ritrárre* to withdraw, as *tráhere*.  
 17 *Rivóltere* to overturn, as *vóltere*.

- 17 *Scendere* to go down, 1 *scendo* I go down, 4 *scési* I went down, 20 *scéso* gone down, 9 *scénda* may I go down.
- 17 *Sciogliere* or *scierre* to choose, 1 *sciélgo* or *sciéglio* I chose, 4 *sciélsi* I chose, 20 *sciéltó* chosen, 9 *sciéлга*, or *sciéglia* may I choose.
- 17 *Sciogliere*, *sciörre* to loosen, 1 *sciólgo*, *scióglio* I loosen, 4 *sciólfi* I loosen'd, 20 *sciólto* loose, 9 *sciólга*, or *scióglia*, may I loosen.
- 17 *Scorgere* to discover, 1 *scórgo* I discover, 4 *scórfi* I discovered, 20 *scórto* discovered, 9 *scórга* may I discover.
- 17 *Scrivere* to write, 1 *scrivo* I write, 4 *scrissi* I wrote, 20 *scritto* written, 9 *scriva* may I write.
- 17 *Scuotere* to shake, 1 *scuóte* I shake, 4 *scófsi* I shook, 20 *scóffo* shaken, 9 *scuóta* may I shake.
- 17 *Soccorrere* to succour, as *córrere*.
- 17 *Sommèrgere* to drown, 1 *sommérgo* I drown, 4 *sommérfi* I drown'd, 20 *sommérso* drown'd, 9 *sommér-ga* may I drown.
- 17 *Sorgere* to rise, *sórgo* I rise, 4 *sórfi* I rose, 20 *sórtó* risen, 9 *sórga* may I rise.
- 17 *Spargere* to sprinkle, 1 *spárgo* I sprinkle, 4 *spárfi* I sprinkled, 20 *spárfó* sprinkled, 9 *spárga* may I sprinkle.
- 17 *Spandere* to spill, 1 *spándo* I spill, 4 *spánsi* I spilt, 20 *spánsó* spilt, 9 *spánda* may I spill.
- 17 *Spendere* to spend, *spéndo* I spend, 4 *spéfi* I spent, 20 *spéso* spent, 9 *spénda* may I spend.
- 17 *Spegnere* to quench, 1 *spéngo* or *spégnó*, I quench, 4 *spénfi* I quencht, 20 *spénto* quencht, 9 *spénga*, or *spéгна* may I quench.
- 17 *Splendere* to glitter, 1 *spléndo* I glitter, 4 *splendei* I glitter,

glittered, 20 *splenduto* glittered, 9 *splenda* may I glitter.

17 *Spignere*, or *spingere* to shove, 1 *spingo*, or *spigno* I shove, 4 *spensi* I did shove, 20 *spinto* shov'd, 9 *spinga*, or *spigna* may I shove.

17 *Stendere* to stretch, 1 *stendo* I stretch, 4 *stesi* I stretcht, 20 *steso* stretcht, 9 *stenda* may I stretch.

17 *Stringere*, or *strignere* to grasp, 1 *stringo*, or *strigno* I grasp, 4 *strinsi* I grasp't, 20 *stretto* grasp'd, 9 *stringa*, or *strigna* may I grasp.

17 *Struggere* to waste, *struggo* I waste, 4 *strussi* I wasted, 20 *strutto* wasted, 9 *strugga* may I waste.

17 *Succedere* to succeed, 1 *succedo* I succeed, 4 *successi* I succeeded, 20 *successo* succeeded, 9 *succeda* may I succeed.

17 *Svellere* to pluck, 1 *svello* I pluck, 4 *svélli* I pluckt, 20 *svélto* pluckt, 9 *svella* may I pluck.

17 *Tendere* to lay, *tendo* I lay, 4 *tési* I layd, 20 *téso* layd, 9 *tenda* may I lay.

17 *Tessere* to weave, 1 *téssio* I weave, *téssi* I wove, 20 *tesuto* woven, 9 *tessa* may I weave.

17 *Tingere* to dye, 1 *tingo* I dye, 4 *tinsi* I dyed, 20 *tinto* dyed, 9 *tinga* may I dye.

17 *Togliere* or *torre* to take away, 1 *tólgo* or *tóglio* I take away, 4 *tólfi* I took away, 20 *tólto* taken away, 9 *tólga*, or *tógli* may I take away.

17 *Trahere*, or *trarre* to draw, 1 *trággo* I draw, 4 *trássi* drew, 20 *trátto* drawn, 9 *trágga* may I draw.

17 *Torcere* to twist, 1 *tórco* I twist, 4 *tórsi* I twisted, 20

- tórto* twisted, 9 *tórca* may I twist.  
 17 *Uccidere* to kill, 1 *ucciao* I kill, 4 *uccísi* I kild, 20 *ucciso* kild, 9 *uccéda* may I kill.  
 17 *Véndere* to sell, 1 *vénao* I sell, 4 *vendei*, or *vendétti* I sold, 20 *vendúto* sold, 9 *vénda* may I sell.  
 17 *Vólgera* to turn, 1 *vólgo* I turn, 4 *vólfi* I turn'd, 20 *vólto* turn'd, 9 *vólga* may I turn.  
 17 *Vivere* to live, 1 *vivo* I live, 4 *vissi* I liv'd, 20 *vissúto* or *vísso* liv'd, 9 *víva* may I live.  
 17 *Ungere* or *úgnere* to annoint, 1 *únga* or *úgno* I annoint, 4 *únsi* I annointed, 20 *únto* annointed, 9 *únga*, or *úgna* may I annoint.
-

An example of one for all.

I.

Sing. { *'Io chiédo, or chiéggo, I ask.*  
*Tu chiédi, thou do'st ask.*  
*Egli ch'ède, he doth ask.*

Plur. { *Noi chiediamo, or chieggiamo, we ask.*  
*Voi chiedete, ye ask.*  
*'Essi chiedono, or chieggono, they ask.*

4.

Sing. { *'Io chiésti, I ask'd.*  
*Tu chiedésti, thou asked'st.*  
*'Egli chiése, he ask'd.*

Plur. { *Noi chiedemmo, or chiedéssimo, we ask'd.*  
*Voi chiedéste, ye ask'd.*  
*'Essi chiesero, they ask'd.*

9.

Sing. { *Dio voglia che 'Io chiéda, or chiégga, pray God*  
*I ask.*  
*Tu chiéda, or chiégga, thou ask.*  
*'Egli chiéda, or chieggga, he ask.*

Plur.

Plur. { *Noi chiediamo*, or *chiediamo*, we ask.  
       { *Voi chiediate*, or *chiediate*, ye ask.  
       { *Essi chiedano*, or *chiedano*, they ask.

20.

*Ch'èsto*, }  
*Ch'èst*, } asked.  
*Ch'èsta*, }  
*Ch'èste*, }

### The irregulars of the fourth Conjugation.

*The Verbs that end in sco are usually these.*

*Abbellire* to beautifie, *abbellisco*, I beautifie.  
*Abhorrire* to abhor, *abhorrisco*.  
*Abbolire* to abolish, *abbolisco*.  
*Adherire* to adhere, *adherisco*.  
*Adolcire* to sweeten, *addolcisco*.  
*Aggrandire* to magnifie, *aggrandisco*.  
*Alleggerire* to ease, *alleggerisco*.  
*Ambire* to desire, *ambisco*.  
*Ammonire* to admonish, *ammonisco*.  
*Ammutare* to wax dumb, *ammutisco*.  
*Ammutolire* idem, *ammutolisco*.  
*Annitire* to hinney, or ney, *annitrisco*.  
*Apparire* to appear, *appaio*.  
*Ardire* to dare, *ardisco*.  
*Arrossire* to blush, *arrossisco*.  
*Affalire* to assail, *affalisco*.

- Atterire* to terrifie, *atterisco*.  
*Attribuire* to attribute, *attribuisco*.  
*Avvilire* to villifie, *avvilisco*.  
*Balbutire* to stammer, *balbutisco*.  
*Bandire*, to proclaim, *bandisco*.  
*Capire* to conceive, *capisco*.  
*Chiarire* to clear, *chiarisco*.  
*Colorire* to colour, *colorisco*.  
*Colpire* to hit, *colpisco*.  
*Comparire* to appear, *comparisco*.  
*Compartire* to distribute, *compartisco*.  
*Compatire* to pity, *compatisco*.  
*Compire* to complement, *compisco*.  
*Concepire* to conceive, *concepisco*.  
*Condire* to season, *condisco*.  
*Conferire* to confer, *conferisco*.  
*Conseguire* to atchieve, *conseguisco*.  
*Contribuire* to contribute, *contribuisco*.  
*Costituire* to appoint, *costituisco*.  
*Custodire* to guard, *custodisco*.  
*Differire* to defer, *differisco*.  
*Definire* to define, *definisco*.  
*Essaudire* to harken to, *essaudisco*.  
*Essibire* to exhibit, *essibisco*.  
*Fallire* to fail, *fallisco*.  
*Fastidire* to molest, *fastidisco*.  
*Favorire* to favour, *favorisco*.  
*Ferire* to wound, *ferisco*.  
*Finire* to finish, *finisco*.  
*Fiorire* to flourish, *fiorisco*.  
*Forbire* to forbish, *forbisco*.  
*Fornire* to end, or furnish, *fornisco*.  
*Gradire* to please, *gradisco*.

- Granire* to grow grany, *granisco*.  
*Guarire* to heal, *guarisco*.  
*Imbandire* to dish up, *imbandisco*.  
*Imbrunire* to make brown, *imbrunisco*.  
*Imbruttire* to wax ugly, *imbruttisco*.  
*Immagire* to wax lean, *immagrisco*.  
*Impallidire* to wax pale, *impallidisco*.  
*Impaurire* to wax fearful, *impaurisco*.  
*Impazzire* to wax mad, *impazzisco*.  
*Impedire* to hinder, *impedisco*.  
*Impietosire*, to wax pitiſul, *impietosisco*.  
*Impetrare* to turn to ſtone, *impietrisco*.  
*Impoltronire* to become lazy, *impoltronisco*.  
*Impoverire* to grow poor, *impoverisco*.  
*Inacerbire* to vex, *inacerbisco*.  
*Inar dire* to wither, *inaridisco*.  
*Inasprire* to exasperate, *inasprisco*.  
*Incancherire* to envenom, *incancherisco*.  
*Incenerire* to burn to aſhes, *incenerisco*.  
*Incrudelire* to wax cruel, *incrudelisco*.  
*Indurire* to grow hard, *indurisco*.  
*Infellonire* to become felonious, *infellonisco*.  
*Inferire* to inject, *injerisco*.  
*Infistolire* to grow to a fiſtula, *infistolisco*.  
*Ingelosire* to grow jealous, *ingelosisco*.  
*Inrozzire* to grow jaſhiſh, *inrozzisco*.  
*Inruginire* to grow ruſty, *inruginisco*.  
*Intriſtire* to grow wicked, *intristiſco*.  
*Iſtituire* to inſtitute, *iſtituiſco*.  
*Inſuperbire* to wax proud, *inſuperbiſco*.  
*Intepedire* to be luke-warm, *intepaiſco*.  
*Intenerire* to wax tender, *intenerisco*.  
*Intimidire* to grow fearful, *intimidisco*.



- Intimorire* to cause fear, *intimorisco*.  
*Intisichire*, to grow into a Consumption, *intisichisco*.  
*Invaghire* to fall in love, *invaghisco*.  
*Invelenire* to poyson, *invelenisco*.  
*Invigorire* to grow strong, *invigorisco*.  
*Languire* to languish, *languisco*.  
*Lenire* to mingle, *lenisco*.  
*Marcire* to rott, *marcisco*.  
*Nitrare* to ney, *nitrisco*.  
*Offerire* to offer, *offerisco*.  
*Oraire* to weave, *ordisco*.  
*Partorire* to bring forth, *partorisco*.  
*Piaire* to plead, *piatisco*.  
*Polire* to polish, *polisco*.  
*Prefagire* to presage, *presagisco*.  
*Prohibire* to prohibit, *prohibisco*.  
*Prostituire* to prostitute, *prostituisco*.  
*Punire* to punish, *punisco*.  
*Putire* to stinke, *putisco*.  
*Raddolcire* to sweeten, *raddolcisco*.  
*Rapire* to snatch, *rapisco*.  
*Restituire* to restore, *restituisco*.  
*Ringiovenire* to wax young, *ringiovenisco*.  
*Riverire* to reverence, *riverisco*.  
*Ruggire* to roar, *ruggisco*.  
*Salire* to mount, *salisco*.  
*Sepelire* to bury, *sepelisco*.  
*Sbigottire* to be amaz'd, *sbigottisco*.  
*Smagrire* to grow lean, *smagrisco*.  
*Smaltire* to digest, *smaltisco*.  
*Smarrire* to affrighten, *smarrisco*.  
*Sminuire* to lessen, *sminuisco*.  
*Sofferire* to suffer, *sofferisco*.

*Sortire* to fall out, *sortisco*.

*Stordire* to stun, *stordisco*.

*Stupire* to be amazed, *stupisco*.

*Svenire* to swoon, *svenisco*.

*Suppire* to supply, *suppisco*.

*Tradire* to betray, *tradisco*.

*Vbidire* to obey, *vbidisco*.

*Unire* to unite, *unisco*.

*Uscire* to goe out, *uscisco*, or rather *esco*.

And so also *riniscire* to come off wel in any under-  
taking, *Riniscisco*, or *riesco*.

These following are of double Conjugations,  
*viz.* of the first and fourth.

*Aggradire*, }  
*Aggradare*, } to please.

*Arrossire*, }  
*Arrossare*, } to blush, or wax red.

*Colorire*, }  
*Colorare*, } to colour.

*Impazzire*, }  
*Impazzare*, } to wax mad.

*Inanimire*, }  
*Inanimare*, } to encourage.

Sternutire, } to sneez.  
Sternutare, }

An example of a Verb in *sco*, namely in  
what Tenses it keeps that vein.

I.

Sing. { *'Io abbellisco*, I beautifie.  
          { *Tù abbellisci*, thou dost beautifie.  
          { *'Egli abbellisce*, he doth beautifie.

Plur. { *Noi abbelliamo*, we beautifie.  
          { *Voi abbellite*, ye beautifie.  
          { *'Essi abbelliscono*, they beautifie.

8.

Sing. { *Abbellisci tu*, beautifie thou.  
          { *Abbellisca egli*, let him beautifie.

Plur. { *Abbelliamo noi*, let us beautifie.  
          { *Abbellite voi*, beautifie ye.  
          { *Abbelliscano essi*, let them beautifie

9.

Sing. { *Dio voglia che 'Io abbellisca*, God grant I  
          { beautifie.  
          { *Tù abbellisca*, thou beautifie.  
          { *'Egli abbellisca*, he beautifie.

Plur.

Plur. { *Noi abbelliamo*, we beautifie;  
       { *Voi abbelliate*, ye beautifie.  
       { *Essi abbelliscano*, they beautifie.

The like may be done through the rest.

Onely *Uscire* to goe out, is Conjugated  
 as followeth.

1.

Sing. { *Io esco*, I go out.  
       { *Tu esci*, thou goest out.  
       { *Egli esce*, he goeth out.

Plur. { *Noi usciamo*, we go out.  
       { *Voi uscite*, ye go out.  
       { *Essi escono*, they go out.

2.

*Usciva*, I went, or was going out.

3.

*Son uscito*, I am gone out.

4.

*Uscii*, I went out, or have gone out.

5.

*Era uscito*, I had gone out.

6.

*Fui uscito, idem.*

7.

*Uscirò, I shall, or will goe out.*

8.

Sing. { *Esci tu, go thou out.*  
*'E sca egli, let him goe out.*

Plur. { *Usciamo noi, let us go out.*  
*Uscite voi, go ye out.*  
*'E scano essi, go they out, or let them go out.*

9.

Sing. { *Dio voglia che 'Io é sca, God grant I goe out.*  
*Tu é sca, thou goe out.*  
*'Egli é sca, he go out.*

Plur. { *Noi usciamo, we goe out.*  
*Voi usciate, ye goe out.*  
*'Essi é scano, they goe out.*

10.

*Dio volésse che 'Io uscissi, would God I did goe out.*

11.

*Uscissi 'Io, did I go out.*

12.

*Uscirei, I should, or would goe out.*

*Dio*

13.  
Dio voglia che 'Io sia uscito, God grant I have  
gone out.

14.  
Dio volesse che 'Io fossi uscito, would God I had  
gone out.

15.  
'Io sarei uscito, I should have gone out.

16.  
Quando 'Io sarò uscito, when I shall be gone forth.

17.  
Uscire, to goe out.

18.  
Haver ad uscire, }  
'Effer per uscire, } to be about to goe out.  
Dover uscire, }

19.  
Uscendo, going out.

20.  
Uscito, }  
Usciti, } gone out.  
Uscita, }  
Uscite, }

Sing.

Sing

Plur.

'Effer

21.

'Effer uscìto, to be gone out.

22.

Essendo uscìto, being gone out.

23.

Havendo ad uscìre, }  
Essendo per uscìre, } being about to go out.  
Dovendo uscìre.

Such as end not in *sc* are Conjugated,  
as followeth.

1.

Sing.	{	'Io ápro, I open.	{	Plur.	{	Noi apríamo, we open.
		Tu ápr, thou openest.				Voi aprite, ye open.
		Egli ápre, he openeth.				Essi aprono, they open.

2.

'Io apríva, I did open, or was opening.

3.

'Io hò apérto, I have opened.

4.

Sing. { 'Io apríi, or apérse, I op't.  
          { Tu aprísti, thou op't.  
          { 'Egli aprì, or apérse, he op't.

Plur. { Noi aprímmo, or apríssimo, we op't.  
          { Voi aprísti, ye op't.  
          { 'Essi aprírono, or apérsero, they op't.

M

'Le

Effer

5.  
*Io havéva aperto, I had opened.*

6.  
*Io hebbi aperto, Idem.*

7.  
*Io aprirò, I shall, or will open.*

8.  
Sing. { *Apri tu, open thou.*  
          *Apra egli, let him open.*

Plur. { *Apriamo noi, let us open.*  
          *Apriate voi, open ye.*  
          *Aprano essi, open they, or let them open.*

9.  
Sing. { *Dio voglia che 'Io apra, God grant I open.*  
          *Tu apra, thou open.*  
          *Egli apra, he open.*

Plur. { *Noi apriamo, we open.*  
          *Voi apriate, ye open.*  
          *Essi aprano, they open.*

10.  
*Dio voléssi che 'Io aprissi, would God I did open.*

11.  
*Aprissi 'Io, did I open.*

12.  
*Aprirei, I should, or would open.*

[Dio



13.

*Dio vòglia che 'Io habbia apërto*, God grant I have opened.

14.

*Dio volèsse che 'Io havéssi apërto*, would God I had opened.

15.

*'Io havrei apërto*, I should have opened.

16.

*Quándo 'Io havrò apërto*, when I shall have opened.

17.

*Aprire*, to open.

18.

*Havèr ad aprire*,  
*'Effer per aprire*,  
*Dovèr aprire*, } to be about to open.

19.

*'Aprèndo*, opening.

20.

*Apërto*,  
*Apèrti*,  
*Apèrta*,  
*Apèrte*, } opened.

21.

*Havèr apèrto*, to have opened.

22.

*Havèndo apèrto*, having opened.

23.

*Havèndo ad aprìre,*  
*Essèndo per aprìre,*  
*Dovèndo aprìre.* } being about to open.

The Verb *Dìre* to say.

1.

Sing. { *'Io d'ico*, I say.  
*Tù d'ici*, thou sayest.  
*'Egli dice* he saith.

Plur. { *Noi dic'amo*, we say.  
*Voi d'ite*, ye say.  
*'Essi dicono*, they say.

2.

*'Io d'icèvo* I did say, or was saying.

3.

*'Io hò dètto*, I have said.

Sing.

4.

- Sing. { *'Io dissi*, I said.  
*Tu dicesti*, thou saidst.  
*'Egli disse*, he sayd.
- Plur. { *Noi dicemmo*, we sayd.  
*Voi diceste*, ye sayd.  
*'Essi dissero*, they said.

5.

*'Io haveva detto*, I had sayd.

6.

*'Io hebbi detto*. Idem.

7.

*'Io dirò*, I shall, or will say, &c.

8.

- Sing. { *Dì tu*, say thou.  
*Dica egli*, let him say.

- Plur. { *Diciamo noi*, say we.  
*Dite voi*, say ye.  
*Dicano essi*, say they, or let them say.

9.

- Sing. { *Dio voglia che 'Io dica*, God grant I say.  
*Tu dica*, thou say.  
*'Egli dica*, he say.

Plur.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Noi diciamo, we say.} \\ \text{Voi diciate, ye say.} \\ \text{Essi dicano, they say.} \end{array} \right.$

10.

*Dio volèsse che 'Io dicéssi*, would God I did say.

11.

*Dicéssi 'Io*, should I say,

12.

*Direi*, I should, or would say.

13.

*Dio voglia che 'Io habbia detto*, pray God I have sayd.

14.

*Dio volèsse che 'Io havéssi detto*, would to God I had sayd.

15.

*'Io havrei detto*, I should, or would have said.

16.

*Quando 'Io havrò detto*, when I shall have said.

17.

*Dire*, to say.

18.

*Havèr a dire,*  
*'Effer per dire,*  
*Dovèr dire.* } to be about to say.

19.

*Dicèndo*, saying.

20.

*Détto,*  
*Détti*  
*Détta*  
*Détte,* } sayd.

21.

*Havèr détto*, to have sayd.

22.

*Havèndo détto*, having sayd.

23.

*Havèndo a dire,*  
*Essèndo per dire,*  
*Dovèndo dire,* } being about to say.

The Verb *Gire*, to goe.

1.

*Voi gite*, you go, or ye go.

2.

Sing. { *'Io giva*, or *gia*, I did go, or was going.  
*Tu givi*, thou didst goe. &c.  
*'Egli giva*, or *gia*, he did go, &c.

Plur. { *Noi givamo*, we did goe, or were going.  
*Voi givate*, ye did go, &c.  
*'Essi givano*, they did go.

4.

Sing. { *'Io giì*, I went.  
*Tu gisti*, thou wentst.  
*'Egli giì*, he went.

Plur. { *Noi gimmo*, or *gissimo*, we went.  
*Voi giste*, ye went.  
*'Essi girono*, they went.

7.

*Grò*, I shall, or will goe.

8.

*Gite*, goe ye.

11.

*Gissi* 'I<sup>o</sup>, should I goe.

12.

*Girei*, I should, or would goe.

13.

*Dio voglia che 'Io sia gito*, pray God I have gone.

And so consequently in all the compound tenses, though not so frequent, &c.

17.

*Gire*, to goe.

18.

*Havèr á gire*,  
'*Esser per gire*, } to be about to go  
*Dovèr gire*, }

20.

*Gito*,  
*Giti*,  
*Gita*, } gone.  
*Gite*, }

21.

'*Esser gito*, to be gone.

22.

'*Essendo gito*, being gone.

23.

*Havendo a gire,*  
*Essendo per gire,*  
*Dovendo gire,* } being about to go.

---

The Verb *Ire* to goe, is in a manner the same with the former, onely this is more us'd in prose; though neither of them so much as *andare*, which is of the first Conjugation, and signifies to goe; in the compound Tenses, *ire* is more frequent than *gire*; in the single Tenses, *gire* more than *ire*; saying, *Son ito*, *era ito*, I am gone, I was gone, rather than *son gito*, *era gito*; but *gi va* I went; or *gi rò*, I shall or will goe, rather than *irò*, &c.

The Verb *muorire* to dye:

I.

Sing. { *Muòio*, or *muòro*, I die.  
*Tu muòri*, thou diest.  
*Egli muòre*, he dieth.

Plur. { *Noi muoiàmo*, or *muoriàmo*, we die.  
*Voi muorite*, ye die.  
*Essi muóiono*, or *muórono*, they die.

2.

*To muorivo*, or *muoriva*, I was dying.



3.

*'Io son mórto*, I am dead.

4.

Sing.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{'Io mórì, or mórì, I dyed.} \\ \text{'Tù mórìstì, thou dyedst.} \\ \text{'Egli mórìse, or mórì, he died.} \end{array} \right.$

Plur.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Noì mórìmmo, or mórìssimo, we died.} \\ \text{Voì mórìste, yedied.} \\ \text{'Essi mórìsero, or mórìrono, they died.} \end{array} \right.$

5.

*'Io éra mórto*, I had died, or was dead.

6.

*'Io fù mórto*, idem.

7.

*Morìrò, or morrò*, I shall, or will die.

8.

Sing.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Muòrì tù, die thou.} \\ \text{Muòra, or muòia égli, let him die.} \end{array} \right.$

Plur.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Muoiámo, or muoriámo noi, die we, or let us} \\ \text{dye.} \\ \text{Muorìte voi, die ye.} \\ \text{Muòiano, or muòrano éssi, die they, or let them} \\ \text{die.} \end{array} \right.$

Sing.

9.  
Sing. { Dio vèglia che 'Io muòia, or muòra, God grant I  
dye.  
Tù muòia or muòra, thou dye.  
'Egli muòia, or muòra, he dye.

Plur. { Noi muoiàmo, or muoriàmo, we dye.  
Voi muoiàte, or muoriàte, ye dye.  
'Essi muòiano, or muòrano, they dye.

10.  
Dio volèsse che 'Io fòssi mòrto, would God I were  
dead, or dyed:

11.  
Muorissi' Io, should I dye.

12.  
Muorirei, or morrei, I should, or would dye.

13.  
Dio vòglia che 'Io sìa mòrto, God grant J have  
dyed.

14.  
Dio volèssi che 'Io fòssi mòrto, would God J had  
dyed, or were dead.

15.  
Sarei mòrto, I should die, or be dead.

16.  
Quàndo 'Io sarò mòrto, when J shall be dead.

Muorire

17.

*Muorire*, to dye.

18.

*Havèr à morire*,  
*'Effer per morire*, } to be about to die.  
*Dovèr morire*,

19.

*Muorèndo*, dying.

20.

*Mórto*,  
*Mórti*, } dead.  
*Mórta*,  
*Mórtè*,

21.

*'Effer mórto*, to be dead.

22.

*Essèndo mórto*, being dead.

23.

*Havèndo à morire*,  
*Essèndo per morire*, } being about to dye.  
*Dovèndo morire*,

Note, that sometimes *morire*, signifies to kill, as  
*l' hà quasi mórto*, he hath almost killed him:  
then in the compound Tenses you must  
use the Verb *havére*, not *éssere*.

The

The Verb *Salire* to ascend.

1.

Sing. { *Io salgo*, or *salgo*, I ascend.  
           *Tù sal*, thou ascendest.  
           *Egli sale*, he ascendeth.

Plur. { *Noi saliamo*, we ascend.  
           *Voi salite*, ye ascend,  
           *Essi salgono*, or *salgono*, they ascend.

2.

*Io salivo*, or *saliva*, I did ascend, or was ascending.

3.

*Io son salito*, I have ascended.

4.

Sing. { *Io salii*, or *salii*, I ascended.  
           *Tù salisti*, thou ascendedst.  
           *Egli salì*, or *salì*, he ascended.

Plur. { *Noi salimmo*, or *salissimo*, we ascended.  
           *Voi saliste*, ye ascended.  
           *Essi salirono*, or *salsero*, they ascended.

5.

*Io era salito*, I had ascended.

6.

*Io fui salito. Idem.*

7.

*Io salirò, I shall ascend, or sarò.*

8.

Sing. { *Sáli tu, ascend thou.*  
*Sálga egli, let him ascend.*

Plur. { *Saliámo, or Salghiámo noi, ascend we, or let us*  
*ascend.*  
*Salite voi, ascend ye.*  
*Ságliano, or sálgano essi, ascend they, or let them*  
*ascend.*

9.

Sing. { *Dio vógli che 'Io sálga, or ságliá, God grant*  
*I ascend.*  
*Tù sálga, thou ascend.*  
*'Egli sálga, or ságliá, he ascend.*

Plur. { *Noi sagliámo, or salghiámo, we ascend.*  
*Voi sagliáte, ye ascend.*  
*'Essi sálgano, or ságliano, they ascend.*

10.

*Dio voléssé che 'Io salíssi, would God I ascended.*

11.

*Salíssi 'Io, would I ascended.*

12.

'Io salirei, or farrei, J should, or would ascend.

13.

Dio voglia che 'Io sia salito, pray God J have ascended.

14.

Dio volèsse che 'Io fèssi salito, would God J had ascended,

15.

'Io farei salito, J should or would have ascended.

16.

Quando 'Io sarò salito, when J shall be ascended.

17.

Salire, to ascend.

18.

Havèr a salire, }  
 Esser per salire, } to be about to ascend.  
 Dovèr salire, }

19.

Salendo, ascending.

20.

Salito, }  
 Saliti, } ascended,  
 Salita, }  
 Salite, }

Esser

21.

*'Effer falito*, to be ascended.

22.

*Essendo falito*, being ascended.

23.

*Havendo à salire*  
*Essendo per salire*  
*Dovendo salire* } being about to ascend.

The compound Tenses are sometimes used with the Verb *havere*, as *non hebbi prima salito le scale*, &c. I had no sooner got up stairs, &c.

The Verb *venire* to come.

1.

Sing. { *'Io vengo*, or *végno*, I come.  
*Tù vieni*, thou comest.  
*'Egli viene*, he cometh.

Plur. { *Noi veniamo*, or *venghiamo*, we come.  
*Voi venite*, ye come.  
*'Essi vengono*, they come.

2.

*'Io venívo, or veníva, I was coming, or did come.*

3.

*'Io son venúto, I am come.*

4.

Sing. { *'Io vènni, I came.*  
*'Tù venísti, thou camest.*  
*'Egli vènne, he came.*

Plur. { *Noi venímmo, or veníssimo, we came.*  
*'Voi venísti, ye came.*  
*'Essi vènnero, they came.*

5.

*'Io éra venúto, I had come.*

6.

*'Io fui venúto. Idem.*

7.

*'Io venirò, verrò, I shall or wil come.*

8.

Sing. { *Vieni tu, come thou.*  
*Verga, or végnà egli, let him come.*



Plur. { *Vegniámo*, or *vengh'ámo noi*, come we.  
           { *Venite voi*, come ye.  
           { *Vengano*, or *végnano essi*, come they, or let them  
                   come.

9.  
 Sing. { *Dio voglia che 'Io vengá*, or *végna*, God grant I  
           { come.  
           { *Tu vègna*, or *vénga*, thou come.  
           { *'Egli v'égna*, or *vénga*, he come.

Plur. { *Noi vegniámo*, or *venghiámo*, we come.  
           { *Voi vegniáte*, or *verghiáte*, ye come.  
           { *'Essi vengano*, or *végnano*, they come.

10.  
*Dio voléffe che 'Io veníssi*, would God I came.

11.  
*Veníssi 'Io*, came I.

12.  
*'Io venirei*, or *verrei*, I should or would come.

13.  
*Dio voglia che 'Io sia venúto*, God grant I be  
 come.

14.  
*Dio voléffe che 'Io fossi venúto*, would God I had  
 come.

15.

*'Io farei venuto*, I should or would have come.

16.

*Quando 'Io sarò venuto*, when I shall be come.

17.

*Venire*, to come.

18.

<i>Haver à venire</i>	}	to be about to come
<i>'Effer per venire</i>		
<i>Dovèr venire</i>		

19.

*Venendo*, coming.

20.

<i>Venuto</i>	}	come.
<i>Venuti</i>		
<i>Venuta</i>		
<i>Venute</i>		

21.

*'Effer venuto*, to be come.

22.

*Essendo venuto*, being come.

33.

*Havendo a venire*  
*Essendo per venire*  
*Dovendo venire* } being about to come.

The Verb *Udire* to hear.

1.

Sing. { *'Io odo*, I hear.  
*Tu odi*, thou hearest.  
*'Egli ode*, he heareth.

Plur. { *Noi udiamo*, we hear.  
*Voi udite*, ye hear.  
*'Essi odono*, they hear.

2.

*'Io udívo*, or *udíva*, I did hear, or was hearing.

3.

*'Io hò udíto*, I have heard.

4.

Sing. { *'Io udíi*, I heard.  
*Tu udísti*, thou heardst.  
*'Egli udí*, he heard.

Plur.

Plur. { *Noi udimmo*, or *udissimo*, we heard.  
       { *Voi udiste*, ye heard.  
       { *Essi udirono*, they heard.

5.  
*Io haveva udito*, I had heard.

6.  
*Io hebbi udito*, Idem.

7.  
*Io udirò*, *ud. ò*, I shall or wil hear.

8.  
 Sing. { *Odi tu*, hear thou.  
       { *Oda egli*, hear he, or let him hear.

Plur. { *Udiamo noi*, let us hear.  
       { *Udite voi*, hear ye.  
       { *Odano essi*, let them hear.

9.  
 Sing. { *Dio vòsia che 'Io óda*, God grant I hear.  
       { *Nì Oia*, thou hear.  
       { *Egli óda*, he hear.

Plur. { *Noi udiamo*, we hear.  
       { *Voi udiate*, ye hear.  
       { *Essi ódado*, they hear.

10.  
*Dio volèsse che 'Io udissi*, would God I heard.

11.

*Udissi* 'Io, did I hear, or heard I.

12.

'*Io udirei*, or *udrei*, I should or would hear.

13.

*Dio voglia* che 'Io *hàbbia udito*, God grant I have heard.

14.

*Die volèsse* che 'Io *havèssi udito*, God grant I had heard.

15.

'*Io havrei udito*, I should, or would have heard.

16.

*Quando* 'Io *avrò udito*, when I shall have heard.

17.

*Udire*, to hear.

18.

*Havèr ad udire* }  
*Èsser per udire* } to be about to hear  
*Dovèr udire* }

19.

*Udendo*, hearing.

20.

<i>Udito</i>	}	heard.
<i>Uditi</i>		
<i>Udita</i>		
<i>Udite</i>		

21.

*Havèr udito*, to have heard.

22.

*Havendo udito*, having heard.

23.

<i>Havendo ad udire</i>	}	being about to hear.
<i>Essendo per udire</i>		
<i>Dovendo udire</i>		

Note,

Note, that there are some Moods and Tenses that some Verbs of all the four Conjugations are frequently contracted in.

17.

*Bère* to drink, from *Bévere*.

*Corre* to gather, from *cogliere*.

*Durre* to lead, from *dúcere*, and so all the derivatives and compounds of the same.

*Porre*, to put, from *pónere*, and so all the derivations and compounds of the same.

*Sciérre* to chuse, from *sciégliere*.

*Sciórre* to loosen, from *sciogliere*.

*Torre* to take away, from *togliere*, and so any derivative or compound of the same.

*Trarre* to draw, from *tráhere*, and so any derivative or compound of the same.

7.

*Berrò* I shall or will drink.

*Corrò* I shall or will gather.

*Durrò* I shall or will lead.

*Porrò* I shall or will put.

*Scierrò* I shall or wil chuse.

*Sciorrò* I shall or wil loosen.

*Torrò* I shall or will take.

*Trarrò* I shall or will draw.

12.

*Berreì*, I should or would drink.

*Correì* I should or would gather.

*Durreì* I should or would lead.

*Por-*

*Perrei* I should or would put.  
*Scierrei* I should or would chuse.  
*Sciorrei* I should or would loosen.  
*Torre* I should or would take.  
*Trarrei*, I should or would draw.

These following are also contracted in the Tenses signified by number 7. and 12.

*Andàre* to goe.  
*Dolère* to grieve.  
*Dovère* to owe.  
*Havère* to have.  
*Morìre* to dye.  
*Potère* to be able.  
*Rimanère* to remain.  
*Sapère* to know.  
*Tenère* to hold.  
*Valère* to be worth or able.  
*Vedère* to see.  
*Volère* to be willing.  
*Venìre* to come.

## 7.

*Andrò* for *anderò*, I shall or will go.  
*Dorrò* for *dolerò*, I shall or will grieve.  
*Dovrò* for *doverò*, I shall or will owe.  
*Havrò* for *haverò*, I shall or will have.  
*Morrò* for *morirò*, I shall or will dye.  
*Potrò* for *poterò*, I shall or will be able.  
*Rimarrò* for *rimanerò*, I shall or will remain.  
*Saprò* for *saperò*, I shall or will know.  
*Terrò* for *tenerò*, I shall or will hold.



*Varrò* for *valerò*, I shall or will be worth.  
*Vedrò* for *vederò*, I shall or will see.  
*Vorrò* for *volerò*, I shall or will be willing.  
*Verrò* for *venirò*, I shall or will come.

12.

*Andreì* for *anderèi*, I should or would goe.  
*Dorreì* for *dolereì*, I should or would grieve.  
*Dovreì* for *dovereì*, I should or would owe.  
*Havrèi* for *havereì*, I should or would have.  
*Morreì* for *morireì*, I should or would dye.  
*Potreì* for *potereì*, I should or would be able.  
*Rimarreì* for *rimanereì*, I should or would remain.  
*Sapreì* for *sapereì*, I should or would know.  
*Terreì* for *tenereì*, I should or would hold.  
*Varreì* for *valereì*, I should or would be worth.  
*Vedreì* for *vedereì*, I should or would see.  
*Vorreì* for *volereì*, I should or would be willing.  
*Verreì* for *venireì*, I should or would come.

Observe that the contracts are generally more in use than when written at length.

Of the Verb Passive.

In all Verbs it is made by putting the Verb *sòno* to any passive participle; as for example,

Sing. { *Io sòno amato*, I am loved.  
           { *Tù seì amato*, thou art loved.  
           { *Egli è amato*, he is loved.

Plur.

Plur. { *Noi siamo amati*, we are loved;  
       *Voi siete amati*, ye are loved.  
       *Essi sono amati*, they are loved.

And so of all the rest of the Tenses.

Only in the third person singular and plural by putting *si* before or after, the passivation is express, as *si ama amasi* he, or it is loved; *si amano, amansi*, they, or those things are loved, *si* being ever written apart if coming before, if after, incorporated, and the vowel lost, as appears by *amansi*, not *amano si*.

Verbs Neuters conjugated by the auxiliar Verb  
*Havere* to have,

*Io ho camminato* I have walkt.

*Io ho dovuto* I have owed.

*Io ho dormito* I have slept.

*Io ho nociuto* I have hurt.

*Io ho seduto* I have sate.

*Io ho potuto* I have been able.

*Io ho voluto*, I have been willing, not *son camminato*, *son dovuto*, &c.

Verbs Neuters Conjugated by the Verb  
'*Essere*, to be:

'*Io sono entrato* I have come in, or am come in.  
'*Io son' uscito*, I am gone out, or have gone out.  
'*Io son nato* I am born.  
'*Io son restato* I have forborn.  
'*Io son rimasto*. Idem.  
'*Io son ritornato* I return'd.  
'*Io son volato* I have flownen, not *ho entrato*, &c.

These Verbs are very frequent in discourse, and therefore good heed ought to be taken that they be not misapplied.

The Verb reciprocal how conjugated.

'*Io mi dico* I say my self.  
'*Tu ci dici* thou sayest thy self.  
'*Egli si dice* he saith himself.  
'*Noi ci diciamo* we say our selves.  
'*Voi vi dite* ye say your selves.  
'*Essi si dicono* they say themselves.

And so throughout all along, '*Io mi dicevo*, I sayd my selfe, '*tù ti dicevi*, thou saydest thy selfe, &c.

Others

Others are reciprocal with particles; relating to persons, or things, or both.

*'Io mi fido d' pòchi*, I trust few.  
*Tù ti fidi d' pòchi*, thou trustest few.  
*'Egli si fida d' pòchi*, he trusteth few.  
*Noi ci fidiamo d' pòchi*, we trust few.  
*Voi vi fidate d' pòchi*, ye trust few.  
*'Essi si fidano d' pòchi*, they trust few.

*'Io me ne rido*, I laugh at it.  
*Tù te ne ridi*, thou laughest at it.  
*'Egli se ne ride*, he laughs at it.  
*Noi ce ne ridiamo*, we laugh at it.  
*Voi ve ne ridete*, ye laugh at it.  
*'Essi se ne ridono*, they laugh at it.

Verbs Impersonals absolutely without any Particles.

*Plóve*, it raineth,  
*Tuóna*, it thunders.  
*Névéa*, it snoweth,  
*Dilúvia*, it pours down amain,  
*Tempésta*, it storms or hails.  
*Baléna*, it lightens.

The following Verbs are us'd Impersonally: viz.

*Tocca*, it concerns.  
*Cále*, its one's care.  
*Duóle*, it grieves.  
*Rincresce*, its irksome.  
*Convieniè*, its fitting.  
*Líce*, its lawful.  
*Déve*, one ought.  
*Può*, it is possible.  
*Puóle*, it will be.  
*Díce*, it becomes.  
*Disdice*, it misbecomes.  
*Confá*, it suits.  
*Appartiène*, it belongs.  
*Ricérea*, it requires.

But especially with some of these Particles, *mi*,  
*fi*, *li*, *vi*, *ci*, *ti*. As for example.

1. *Mi tocca*, it concerns me, or comes to my share.
2. *Mi toccáva*, it did concern me.
3. *Mi è toccáto*, it hath concerned me.
4. *Mi toccò*, it concerned me.
5. *Mi éra toccáto*, it had concerned me.
6. *Mi fu toccáto*, Idem.
7. *Mi toccherà*, it will concern me.
8. *Mi tocchi*, let it concern me.
9. *Che mi tocchi*, may it concern me.
10. *Che mi toccasse* would it concern'd me.
11. *Mi toccasse*, should it concern'd me.
12. *Mi toccherébbe*, it would concern me.

13. *Oche*

13. *Oche mi sia toccato*, pray God it hath concern'd me.  
 14. *Oche mi fosse toccato*, would God it had concern'd me.  
 15. *Mi sarèbbe toccato*, it would have concern'd me.  
 16. *Quando mi sarà toccato*, when it shall have concern'd me.  
 17. *Toccarmi*, to concern me.  
 18. *Havermi a toccare* to be about to concern me.  
 19. *Toccandomi*, it concerning me.  
 20. *Toccátomi*, it having concern'd me.  
 21. *'Essermi toccato*, to have concern'd me.  
 22. *Esséndomi toccato*, it having concern'd me.  
 23. *Essendo per toccarmi*, it being to concern me.  
 And so of the rest.
-

An example of the Passivation of the third Persons,  
Singular or Plural, which may serve as well  
for Impersonals as Passives.

1.

*Si Ama amasi*, is loved, or there is loved.

*Si amano, amansi*, are loved, or there are loved.

2.

*Si amava, amavasi*, was loved, or there was loved.

*Si amavano, amavansi*, were loved, or there were loved.

3.

*Si è amato, essi amato*, hath been loved, or there hath  
been loved.

*Si sono amati, s'onsi amati*, have been lov'd, or there have  
been loved.

4.

*Si amò, amossi*, was, or hath been loved, or there was, or  
hath been loved.

*Si amarono amoronsi*, &c. have been loved.

5.

*Si era amato, erasi amato*, had been loved, there had been  
loved.

*Si erano amati, eranasi amati*, had been loved, or there  
had been loved.

7. Si

7.

*Si amerà, amerassi, shall or will be loved, or there shall or will be loved.*

9.

*Si ami, amisi, be it loved, or let there be lov'd.  
Si amino, aminsi, be they loved, or let there be loved.*

11.

*Si amasse, amassessi, were it loved, or were there loved.  
Si amassero, amassersi, were they lov'd or were there loved.*

12.

*Si amerèbbe, amerèbbesi, it, would or should be loved, &c.  
Si amerèbbero, amerèbbersi, they would or should be loved, &c.*

13.

*Si aſi amato, or che ſi ſia amato, God grant that it hath been lov'd, &c.  
Si anſi amati, or che ſi ſiano amati, God grant that they have been lov'd, &c.*

14.

*Fòſſeſi amato, or che ſi ſoſſe amato, would it had been lov'd, or would it have had been lov'd.*

*Fòſſerſi*



*Essersi amati*; or *che si fossero amati*, would they had been lov'd, &c.

15.

*Si sarèbbe amato* or *sarèbbesi amato*, it would have been lov'd, or there would have been lov'd.

*Si sarèbbero amati*, *sarèbbersi amati*, they would have been loved, &c.

16.

*Quando saràssi amato*, or *quando si sarà amato*, when it shall be loved, &c.

*Quando saranno amati*, or *quando si saranno amati*, when they shall be loved, &c.

17.

*Amarsi*, to be loved.

18.

*Haverfi ad amare*, or *haver ad amarsi*.

*Doverfi amare*

*Essersi per amare*.

} to be about to be loved.

19.

*Amandosi*, being beloved.

20.

*Amátosi,*  
*Amátisi,*  
*Amátasi,*  
*Amátessi,*

} beloved.

21.

*Essersi amato,* to have been beloved.

22.

*Essendo si amato,* having been beloved.

23.

*Havendosi ad amare,*  
*Essendosi per amare,*  
*Dovendosi amare,*

} being about to be loved.

Note, that *si* never comes before Infinitives, Gerounds or Participles, as appears in these examples, unless *non*, or *ne*, come immediately before *si*, as, *non si potendo far di méno*, not being possible to do otherwise. Numbers 6. and 8. are not much in use.

The

The Verb *èssere* is oft put Impersonally with the Particles *ci* or *vi*, signifying as much as *there* in English.

## 1.

*Ci è, ecco*, there is, is there? or it is there.

*Ci sono, sonci*, there are, are there? or they are there.

## 2.

*Ci era*, there was, was there?

*Ci erano, or éranci*, there were, or were there.

And so putting (*vi*) in the like manner, *vi è, éuvi, vi era éraui, &c.* and in the Infinitive, *èssere* or *èsservi*, there to be, *esséndoci* or *esséndovi*, there being, or being there.

Note, that in the Conjugations I have us'd the Pronouns *Io, tu, egli, &c.* quite thorow, on purpose to use the Learner to know the Persons, not that they are always necessary in discourse or writing, practise will make this clear.

And so much for the Verbs.

The Contract Participles of the first Conjugation;  
which are most frequent both in writing  
and discourse.

*Accetto* for *accettato*, acceptable or accepted.

*Avvezzo* for *avvezzato*, accustomed.

*Accóncio* for *acconciato*, fit or fitted.

*Adórno* for *adornato*, trimm'd.

*Asciúto* for *asciuttato*, drain'd, dried.

*Calpesto* for *calpestato*, trampled.

*Cárico* for *caricato*, loaded.

*Cásso* for *cassato*, cashier'd.

*Cérco* for *cercato*, fought.

*Comíncio* for *cominciato*, begun.

*Cóncavo* for *concavato*, hollow.

*Confesso* for *confessato*, confest.

*Contento* for *contentato*, contented.

*Cónto* for *contato*, counted.

*Cúlto* for *cultivato*, manur'd.

*Désto* for *Destato*, awak'd.

*Diméstico* for *dimefticato*, tamed.

*Dómo* for *domato*, Idem.

*Férmo* for *fermato*, stop.

*Fráncó* for *francato*, freed.

*Guástó* for *guastato*, spoil'd.

*Gónfio* for *Gonfiato*, swell'd or puff.

*Inchíno*, stoop unto for *inchinato*.

*Infétto* for *infettato*, infected.

*Invólto* for *involtato*, wrap.

*Láceró* for *lacerato*, torn.

*Lógro* for *lograto*, worn.

*Láffo* for *lassato*, wearied.

*Léffo*

*Léſſo* for *Leſſáto*, boil'd.  
*Máceró* for *Maceráto*, bruis'd.  
*Maniſéſto* for *manifeſtáto*, manifeſted.  
*Mózzo* for *mozzáto*, crop't.  
*Móſtro* for *moſtráto*, ſhown.  
*Nétto* for *Nettáto*, cleanſed.  
*Oſo* for *Oſáto*, dared.  
*Práttico* for *pratticáto*, verſt.  
*Péſto* for *peſtáto*, bruifed.  
*Prívo* for *Priváto*, depriv'd.  
*Págo* for *Pagáto*, ſatiſfied.  
*Ráſo* for *Raſáto*, ſhav'd.  
*Ritórno* for *ritornáto*, returned.  
*Racónto* for *Raccontáto*, recited.  
*Ritócó* for *ritoccáto*, toucht over again.  
*Réſto* for *reſtáto*, remain'd.  
*Racchéto* for *racchetáto*, ſtil'd or quieted.  
*Rizzo* for *Rizzáto*, got up.  
*Sácro* for *ſacráto*, devoted.  
*Sciutto* for *ſciuttáto*, dried.  
*Scémo* for *ſcemáto*, leſſen'd.  
*Sécco* for *Seccáto*, dried.  
*Scónſio* for *ſconciáto*, diſorder'd.  
*Sgómbro* for *sgombráto*, freed.  
*Stánco* for *ſtancáto*, wearied.  
*Strácco* for *ſtraccáto*, Idem.  
*Sicúro* for *ſicuráto*, ſecur'd.  
*Tócó* for *toccáto*, toucht.  
*Trite* for *Tritáto*, minc'd or hack'd.  
*Tronco* for *troncáto*, cut off.  
*Vólto* for *Voltáto*, turn'd.  
*Vuóto* for *Vuotáto*, emptied.  
*Urto* for *urtáto*, juſtled.  
*Uſo* for *uſáto*, uſed.

## Of Adverbs.

## I.

*Sì*, yes.

*Signór sì*, yes Sir, *sì Signór*, idem.

*Signóra sì*, yes Madam, *sì Signóra*, idem.

*Madónna sì*, yes, Gammer, or Goody, &c.

*Certaménte*, truly.

*Sì del certo*, yes truly.

*Certaménte poi*, directly now.

*Appónto* just now, the last thing I did.

*Veraménte*, truly.

*In véro*, in truth.

*Cóme vólse la fórté*, as luck would have it.

*In veritá*, in truth.

*Da véro*, In good earnest.

*Affátto*, absolutely, altogether.

*Così*, So.

*Per mia disgrátia*, to my wo.

## 2.

*Affai*, much.

*Più*, more.

*Vie*,

*Molto*,

*Affai più*,

*Di sovérchio*, overplus.

*Davvânzo*, to spare.

*Maggiorménte*, so much the rather.

*Oltre ógni credénza*, beyond all belieif.

*Tant*

*Tanto maggiorménte*, so much the rather.

*Massimaménte*, especially.

*A bastanza*, sufficiently.

*Di gran lóna*, by far.

3.

*Holà*, Ho!

*Hei*, Idem.

*Dabbasso*, below.

*Ad alto*, above there.

*O Di casa*, who's at home here.

4.

*Méglio di*, better than.

*Péggio di*, worse than.

*Il doppio*, as much again.

*Altre tanto*, as much again.

*Tré cotanti*, thrice as much.

*Massimo*, especially.

*Più del bisogno*, more than need.

*A rispétto di*, or *del*, in compariso.

*Più del sólito*, more than usual.

5.

*Anzi*, nay, rather.

*Più presto*, sooner.

*Più tosto*, Idem.

*Méglio sarébbe*, it were better.

*Pér buona sorte*, by good hap.

6, *'Eccho*,

## 6.

'Ecco, behold.  
 'Eccolo, look here it is.  
 Lo vèdi, dost see it.  
 Di sì fatta maniera, in such a like manner.  
 Si fattamente, idem.  
 In guisa, in such a manner, or sort.

## 7.

Nò, no.  
 Signór nò, no Sir,  
 Non Signore, idem.  
 Signóra nò, no Madam.  
 Madónna nò, no Gammer, or Goddy.  
 Maidisi, yes I warrant you.  
 'Anzi che nò I say rather not.  
 Mánco, no, not so much as.  
 Per nùlla, by no means.  
 Non già, no sure.  
 Non púre, not onely.  
 Non che, not onely, no not, much less.  
 Non mica, not in the least.  
 Non è mica véro, no such matter,  
 Non per certo, no indeed.  
 Per certo nò, idem.  
 Non mai Io nò, never not I.  
 Non móna niente, its not material at all.



8.

*Forſi*, perhaps.

*Per avventura*, perchance.

*Per fortuna*, idem.

*Cáſo che*, put caſe that.

*Póſto che*, idem.

*Chi ſà?* who can tell?

*Che che non è*, before you can ſay what is this.

*Non ſaria gran cóſa*, not unlikely.

*'E facil cóſa però*, its likely though.

*Già ſi a che*, ſuppoſe that.

*Potría ben éſer*, it might well be.

9.

*Hor sù*, come.

*Via*, away.

*Animo*, courage.

*Sù allegramente*, come couragiously.

*Il Diavol'è morto a Molomócco*, the Devil is dead, &c.

*Spediſcila*, away with it quickly.

*Finíſcila una volta*, once have done.

*Deh per vita tua*, I prethee now.

*Dímmi di grázia*, prethee tell me.

10.

*Eccetto*, excepting.

*Sálvo che*, ſaving that.

*Fuórche*, but that, excepting.

*Da un inſuóri*, all but one.

*Da due in poi, all but two.*  
*Eccettuàtine due, idem.*  
*Se non due, but, or except two.*  
*Solamente, onely.*  
*Pérche, so that.*  
*Se non è, if it be not.*  
*Da Dio in giù, from God downwards.*  
*Da mio padre in là, all but my father.*

## II.

*Guarda, take heed, upon no terms.*  
*Guarda la gamba, look to the main chance.*  
*Stà in cervello, look about you.*  
*Non vedi ciò che fai, dost not see what thou dost, what*  
*thou art about.*  
*Hai gli occhi ne' calcagni n' è? where are thy eyes, be-*  
*hinde thee?*  
*Non dir ste cose à me, tell not me these things.*  
*Non fare, do not offer it.*  
*Non volèr, do not go about it.*  
*Non mi toccar questa corda, harp not me upon this*  
*string.*  
*A Dio non piaccia, marry God forbid.*  
*Dio ve ne guardi, God defend.*  
*Troppo sarebbe, 'Twere too hard, too much.*

12.

*Chi và lì?* who goes there?  
*Chi è?* who's there, who is't?  
*Donde vién?* whence comest?  
*Di dove sei?* whence art thou?  
*Che vuol dire,* what's the reason.  
*Dónde sei tu?* what place art of?  
*Perche?* why?  
*Per qual cagione?* for what cause?  
*Per fin dove?* how far?  
*Quanto starai?* how long wilt stay?  
*Per fin a quanto?* how long time?  
*Quanti anni hà che?* how many years is it since?  
*Chi v'va?* who are ye for?  
*Quant' hà,* how long is it since.  
*V,* where.

13.

*Méno,* less.  
*Alméno,* at least.  
*Almáncó,* idem.  
*Póco póco,* very little.  
*Alquánto,* somewhat.  
*Tantín tantíno,* never so little.  
*Quánto sarébbe un céce,* about the bigness of a Pea.  
*Ogni póco,* never so little.

## 14.

*Una volta*, one time, once.

*Due volte*, two times, twice.

*Piu volte*, several times.

*Quante volte?* how many times?

*Tante volte*, so many times.

*Ogni tal volta che*, as often as that.

*In quante volte*, in how many times.

*In torno a tante volte*, a matter of so many times.

*Intorno a mille*, a matter of a thousand.

*Da cento*, about a hundred.

*Cento incirca*, idem.

*Ogni volta che*, as often as that.

*Ancor una volta*, once more.

*Mille volte*, a thousand times.

*Cento mila volte*, a hundred thousand times.

*Tutti quanti*, every one, every mothers son.

## 15.

*Prima*, first, in the first place.

*Poi*, next, then, afterwards.

*Terzo*, thirdly.

*Quarto*, fourthly; *e va discorrendo*, and so on.

*Per la prima*, in the first place.

*Un dì sì, l'altro no*, every other day.

*L'altro hiéri*, or *hiéri l'altro*, the other day.

*Frà tanto*, { in the mean time.

*Trà tanto*, {

*Alla per fine*, at the last,

*A vicenda*, by turns,

*Vicende*

*Vicendevolmente*, idem.

*Ultimamente*, lastly.

*Póscia*, afterwards.

*Dapoi*, since.

*A prima vista*, at first sight.

*Primieramente*, as *prima*.

*Quanto al primo*, as to the first.

*Doppo questo*, after this.

*Alla fila*, a row, or in rank.

*Sossopra*, topsie turvy, one with another.

*Alla roverscia*, wrong side outwards.

*Oltre a ciò*, moreover.

*Del pari*, equally.

*Di due in due*, two by two.

*A un a uno*, one by one.

*A brànchi*, in troops.

*A stuolo*, in company.

*A s' b'ère* in ranks.

*Infròtte*, in multitudes.

*A poco a poco*, by little and little, by degrees.

16.

*Altrove*, elsewhere.

*D' altrove*, from elsewhere.

*Appréssò*, near.

*Accanto*, close by.

*Allato*, idem, or by your side.

*Ad' étro*, behind.

*Attorno*, about.

*Ci*, there.

*Costì*, there, or thither.

*Costà*, thither.

*Di colà*, from thence.

*Di*

*Di colà via*, idem.

*In quei contorni*, in those quarters.

*Dove*, where.

*Dovunque*, wherever.

*Dentro*, within.

*Dentro via*, inwardly.

*D'onde?* whence?

*Diétro*, behind.

*Di diétro*, idem.

*Indiétro*, backward.

*Per d'ove?* which way?

*Davanti*, before.

*Fuori*, without.

*Di fuori*, idem.

*Di fuoravia*, from abroad.

*Giù*, down.

*In giù*, downwards.

*Al in giù*, idem.

*Ivi*, there.

*Indi*, thence.

*Intorno*, about.

*Là*, yonder.

*In ogni luogo*, every where.

*Lontano*, afar off.

*Per alcun luogo*, in some place.

*In alcun luogo*, idem.

*In niſſun luogo*, no where, in no place.

*Da qualunque luogo*, from any place.

*Per ogni lato*, on every side.

*Per la casa*, about the house.

*Di lógi*, from afar off.

*A man manca*, on the left hand.

*A man dritta*, on the right hand.

*Onde*, whence.

*Ove*, where.

*Per tutto*, every where.

*Dóve*, idem.

*Ovunque*, wherever.

*In público*, in publike.

*Al paése*, in his own Countrey.]

*Qui*, here.

*Quà*, hither.

*Di quà*, this way.

*Quinci*, thence.

*Quivi*, there.

*Quindi*, thence.

*Da qualunque luogo*, from what place soever

*Infin a quà*, hitherto.

*Verso quà*, towards this place.

*Sin qui*, hitherto, as far as hither.

*Sù*, above.

*In sù*, upwards.

*Sopra*, above or upon.]

*Di sopra*, idem.

*Sotto*, underneath.

*Di sotto*, idem.

*Vi*, there.

*Alla volta di casa*, homewards.

*Verso casa*, idem.

*A casa*, home.

*Vicino*, hard by.

## 17.

*A roverscio*, backwards.  
*A piè giunti*, with feet close together;  
*A man giunte*, with clasped hands.  
*A tentone*, gropingly.  
*A carpone*, grovellingly.  
*Brancolone*, crawlingly.  
*In ginocchione*, on ones knees.  
*Boccòne*, with ones face downwards.  
*Supino*, with ones face upwards.  
*A cavalcione*, astride over.  
*In sùlla vita*, bolt upright.  
*In sùlla pònta de' piedi*, a tip-toes.

## 18.

*Insieme*, together,  
*Parimente*, likewise.  
*Ambidue*, both.  
*Al pari*, equally.  
*Del pari*, idem.  
*A schiere*, in rows or ranks.  
*Scambievolmente*, mutually.

## 19.

*A bel aggio*, fair and softly.  
*Bel bello*, idem.  
*A pòsta*, a purpose.  
*Bène*, well.  
*Per burla*, in jest.



*Di buon cuore*, heartily.

*A caso*, by chance.

*Da dovéro*, in earnest.

*Da per sé*, of ones self, of it self.

*Fedelménte*, faithfully.

*Forfí*, perhaps.

*Forteménte*, strongly.

*Fórte*, aloud.

*Agára*, strivingly in competition.

*In giro*, in a round.

*Mále*, ill.

*Meritaménte*, deservingly.

*Adógni módo*, however.

*Ottimaménte*, most excellently.

*Ornataménte*, neatly.

*Pessimaménte*, most basely.

*Pian piano*, very softly.

*Con raggíone*, with reason.

*Da senno*, in earnest.

*Da scherzo*, in jest.

*Alla sfuggita*, cursorily.

*A billo studio*, for the very once.

*Per fórte*, by chance.

*Smisurataménte*, unmeasurably.

*A tórto*, wrongfully.

*Volontieri*, willingly.

*Di buona voglia*, idem.

*Malvolontieri*, unwillingly.

*Per póco*, within a little, a small matter.

*Strettissimaménte*, most closely, or neer.

*A morevolménte*, kindly.

*Consentienteménte*, by consent.

*In prósa*, in prose.

*In rima*, in verse.

*Alla ballórda*, dizzily.

*Alla buona di Dio*, in a downright way.

*Alla grossolána*, clownishly.

*A più potére*, with all might and main.

*A mia pósta*, at my disposal.

*In più módi*, several ways.

*In súlla gránde*, stately.

*Alla spiccáta*, singly, apart.

*A módo mio*, as I list.

*Da par suo*, like your self, or himself.

*Alla cortegiána*, Court-like, or Courtezán-like.

*Spasimataménte*, passionately.

*Strabocchevolménte*, precipitately.

## 20.

*Affai*, much, or enough, or very.

*A bastánza*, sufficiently.

*Cotánto*, so much.

*Davantággio*, more.

*Dí gran longa*, far more, by far.

*Mólto*, much.

*Méno*, less.

*Mánco*, idem.

*Fuor di módo*, out of measure.

*Póco*, little.

*Più*, more.

*Pochétto*, very little.

*Pochettíno*, very little as may be.

*Pochíssimo*, idem.

*Mólto póco*, very little.

*Póco méno*, little less.

*Per lo più*, for the most part.

*Per la maggiór parte*, idem.

*Per assai*, very much.

*Tutto quánto, tutta quánta*, all, every bit, all over.

*Troppo*, too much.

*Tantino*, a little thought, no bigger than this.

21.

*Cóme*, as.

*Sicóme*, even as.

*Cio è, viz.* that is.

*Così*, so.

*A quel módo*, thus, after that manner.

*A quésto módo*, thus, after this manner.

*A guisa di*, after the nature of.

*Quále*, even as.

*Verbo grátia*, for example.

*Per essemplio*, idem.

*Per módo di dire* *ò raglionare.* } as one would say.

22.

*Separataménte*, apart.

*Da banda, afide.*

*In dispárte*, of one side, afide.

*Partitaménte*, separately.

*Per via di participio*, sharingly.

*Da cánto*, afide.

*Dal cánto mio*, for my part.

*Così mi guardi Iddio, so God help me.*

*Potèr di, by the power of.*

*Puo far Sant' Antonio, by Saint Anthony, or all he can do.*

*Affe, in good faith.*

*Da Christian battezzato, as I am a Christian.*

*Per quèsta carne battezzata, by this Christened flesh, in pointing to their hand.*

*Cospetto di Bacco, before Bacchus.*

*Da servitor che le sono, as I am your servant.*

*Da povero Sacerdote, as I am a poor Priest.*

*Da Cavagliere, as I am a Gentleman.*

*Da quel che sono, as you take me.*

*Afè di Christiano, by the faith of a Christian.*

*Se Dio m' aiuti, so God help me.*

*In coscienza del ànima mia, upon my conscience.*

*Sopra del ànima mia, upon my soul.*

*Sopra l' ànima mia, idem.*

*Per quèsti Santi Vangeli, by the Evangelists.*

*Then a Cross is made either on a table, or ones breast,*

*Corpodì chi non vuò dir, by the body of—I was going to say something.*

*Corpo del Antichristo, by the body of Antichrist.*

*Tal sia di me se--so may I thrive if---*

*Sangue del inimico di Dio, Pox of the Devil.*

*Adéſſo*, now.

*Alhóra*, then.

*Alhóra alhóra*, newly, newly, juſt now.

*Ancóra*, again.

*In un báſſer d'occhio*, in the twinkling of an eye.

*In un baléno*, idem.

*Círca*, about.

*In un Crédo*, in a trice, or as much time as one might ſay his Creed,

*Dimáni*, } to morrow:

*Dománi*, }

*Dìmatina*, } to morrow morning.

*Dommatina*, }

*Dipoi*, afterwards.

*Da ché*, ever ſince that.

*Frà tánto*, in the mean time.

*Alla per fine*, at the laſt.

*Fin ché*, until that.

*Fin a tánto ché*, until ſuch time that.

*Di giórno*, in the day time, alſo in the afternoon.

*Già*, formerly.

*Già*, now.

*Guàrì*, any time.

*Ogni giórno*, every day.

*Hoggi*, to day.

*Hoggi di*, this very day, now adays.

*Hoggi giórno*, idem.

*Hiéri*, yeſterday.

*Hor hóra*, by and by.

*Inánzi*, before.

*Per l' inánzi*, formerly, also, hereafter.

*Per l' avvenire*, from hence forward.

*Per lo inánzi* } for the time to come.

*Da qui inánzi*,

*Da mò inánzi*, idem.

*Per l' adietro*, idem.

*Per témpo*, betimes.

*Incontinénte*, instantly, out of hand.

*All' improvviso*, on the sudden.

*Da un anno in là*, a year before.

*Mò*, now.

*Di meriggio*, at noon day.

*Di mézzo dì*, idem.

*Di mézzo, giòrno*, idem.

*Stammáne*, this morning.

*In cápo al áno*, at the years end.

*In quèsto méntre*, in this interim.

*Di nótte*, in the night time.

*Stà nótte*, this night.

*Per adéssò*, for the present.

*Posdimáni*, after to morrow.

*Pòi*, then.

*Póco fa*, a little while ago.

*Per lo passáto*, for the time | past.

*Da gran pézzo*, not a long time.

*Préssò*, neer.

*Il piú dèlle vólte*, for the most par.

*Un pézzo fa*, a good while ago.

*Piú ánni sòno*, many years ago.

*Quei pòchi ánni c' è stato*, not a few years hath he dwelt  
there---pointing to their hair.

*Pòscia*, afterwards.

*Quándo*, when.

*Di quándo in quándo*, from time to time.

*Da móltro in quà*, not of late.

*Da cent' ánni in quà*, not these hundred years, any time these hundred years.

*Qualúnque vólta*, at any time.

*Ogni vólta ché*, as often as.

*Tutte le vólte ché*, idem.

*Quant' un Ave María*, an *Avenary* time or while.

*Quant' un Miserere*, a *Miserere* while.

*Quási*, almost.

*A man a máno*, idem.

*Da qui ad ún póco*, within this little while.

*Da qui ad úna*, *Settimána*, a week hence,

*Quando che sia*, when ever it be.

*In fin á quándo?* till when, how long?

*Di rádo*, seldome.

*Raríssime vólte*, very seldome.

*Sta séra*, this evening.

*Sin a quí*, hitherto.

*Súbito*, presently.

*Sémpre*, always.

*Sémpre mai*, evermore.

*Sovénte*, often.

*Quánto tempo fà?* how long is't since?

*Tárdi*, late.

*Sin tánto che*, till such time that.

*Non é tróppo*, it is not very long since.

*Póco témpo é*, idem.

*Gran témpo*, its a long time since.

*Talhóra*, sometimes.

*Spéssé vólte*, oftentimes.

*Tál vólta*, sometimes.

*Vólta*

*Vólta à vólta*, every foot, or ever and anon.

*'Ogni trátto*, still, ever.

*Delle vólte*, at times.

*'Alle vólte*, idem.

*Tantósto*, suddenly.

*Daragázzo*, of a lad, since I was a boy.

*Trátto trátto*, ever and anon.

## 25.

*Ben ággia*, happiness attend you, or him.

*Buon pró*, *sanità et allegrezza*, happiness and joy attend you.

*O Dío voglia che*, God grant that--

*O se Dío voléssé ché*, would to God that.

*Piacéssé a Dío ché*, idem.

*Piaccia a Dío ché*, pray God that--

*Faccia Dío*, Gods will be done.

*Facéssé Iddío*, would to God--

*Dío la ne guárdi*, God defend you from it.]

*Buon dì, e buon áнно*, God day.

*Venga a buon pórtó*, a *salvaménso*, may he return safe.

## 26.

*Mal pró*, may it never thrive,

*Mal ággia*, godier on him.

*Và in bordéllo*, away with a pox.

*Che gli venga il mal di san Lázaro*, mischief light on him.



*Sulle forche*, hang him.

*Muoia*, idem.

*Crépi, in tanta mal hora*, let him suffer with a vengeance.

*Che si rompa il collo*, may he break his neck.

*Morir postu*, maist thou dye.

*Che gli possa cascar un occhio*, may one of his eyes drop out of his head.

*Venga la rabbia a quanti sono*, por take them all.

*Senza pro*, never to thrive.

*Conjunctions*

## Conjunctions.

*Oltre*, besides.

*Di più*, moreover.

*Quel che più è*, what is more.

*In oltre*, over and above, or besides.

*Tanto maggiormente*, so much the rather.

## 2.

*Che perciò* ? what then ?

*Perché*, because.

*Perciocchè*, idem.

*Perche nò*, why not ?

*Acciocchè*, to the end that.

*Per amor ché*, by reason that.

*Però*, therefore, or yet.

*Il perché*, the why, or wherefore.

*Per il ché*, for the which.

*Per la qual cãusa*, for the which cause.

*Poi*, then.

*Essendo ché*, seeing that.

3.

*Hòra*, now.

*In somma*, in conclusion.

*Al fin de' fini*, when all is done.

*Pur*, at length, yet.

*Consequentemente*, consequently.

*Dónque*, then.

*A dónque*, so then.

*A tal chè*, so that then, it should seem then that

*Per rispetto*, by reason that.

*Del résto*,

*Del rest ánte*,

*Del rimanente*,

} otherwise, else.

4.

*Anche*, also.

*Anco*, idem.

*Ancóra*, idem.

*Ciò è*, videlicet.

*Di nóvo*, afresh.

*Di fréscó*, lately.

*Tánto*, somuch.

*Quánto*, as,

*E, e*, both, and.

*Sì*, aswel.

*Cóme*, as.

*Si cóme*, even as.

*E*,

*Er*, } and.

*Ed*,

*Etiandio*, also.

5. Con

*Con patto*, upon condition.

*Dato ché*, } so that.

*Postoché*, }

*Non di méno*,

*Núlla di méno*,

*Niente di méno*,

*Non ostante ché*, } nevertheless.  
norwithstanding that.

*Tuttavía*, yet.

*Ma*, but.

*Tuttavólta*, however.

*Cóme ché*, forasmuch as.

*Tutto ché*, although that.

*Ancor ché*, idem.

*Se bene*, idem.

*Al contrário degli álti*, contrary to others.

*Ma ché*, but, so that.

*Quant' a mé*, as for my part.

*Altresì*, as well, also.

*Avvénga ché*, albeit that.

*Se non ché*, but that, &c.

*Pur púre*, yet, for all that.

*Con qués to però*, so that.

*Quantónque*, although.

*Quándo béne*, although, that.

*Trà dúe*, in a quandary, in doubt.

*Non púre*, not only.

*Non sólo, non saláménte, non ché*, not only.

6.

*Non per tanto*, not for all that —

*In módo*, so that.

*In maniera*, idem.

*In sì fatta maniera*, in such a like manner.

*'Onde*, whereupon.

*Póscia ché*, seeing that.

*Attéso ché*, idem.

*Giaché*, since that.

*Dáto ché*, grant that.

*Conciofiaché*, seeing that.

*Concio sia cósá ché*, forasmuch as that.

*Purché*, so that.

*Da ché*, since that.

*Dapoiché*, idem.

7.

O, or,

*O l'un ô l'áltro*, either the one or the other.

*Ovéro*, or else.

*Nè*, nor.

*Nè l' uno né l' áltro*, neither the one nor the other.

*Od*, or.

*O veraménte*, or else.

*O ô*, or either.

## 8.

*Più tosto ché,* rather, or sooner than.

*Più presto ché,*

*Anzi,* rather.

*Anzi ché,* rather then.

*Avanti ché,* before that.

*Prima ché,* idem.

*Prima di*—before, or ere that.

## 9.

*Fuorché,* except.

*Si ma,* I but.

*Ma sì,* idem.

*Se non ché,* but that.

*Se non,* but.

*Non fosse ché,* were it not that.

*Eccettuato ché,* excepting that.

## Prepositions.

With their Applications, the tacks signifying the sense to be imperfect, and that they may be applied to any purpose one have a minde to.

*Accanto* il — or *al* — neer to the —  
*Adosso* al, il — or *di* — upon the —  
*A fronte* al — opposite to the —  
*In faccia* al — idem.  
*Allato* a or *al*, close by, or to the —  
*Al incóntro* di — or *del* — contrary to the —  
*Appiè* del, or *di* — at the foot of —  
*Appetto* al, or *a* — in comparison of —  
*Appresso* di or *al*, near unto the —  
*Circa* di — or *a* — about the — or as for the —  
*Con* il, lo, la, gli, la, le, with the —  
*Contra* } or *del*, against the —  
*Contro* }  
*Di là* di *del* or *dal*, beyond the —  
*Dentro* di *a* or *al*, within the —  
*Davanti* a or *al*, before the —  
*Diétro* a or *di* — behinde the —  
*Di rimpetto* al — or *a* — over against the, or a —  
*Doppo* il or *di* — after the —  
*Frà* il, or *la* — 'twixt the —  
*Fin* al or *a* — until the —  
*Fuor* del — or *di* — out of the — or a —  
*A guisa* del or *di*, after the nature of —

*Giùſta il* — according to the —  
*In anzi di, or a* — before the —  
*Incòntro* } *al or del,* over againſt the —  
*Incòntra* }  
*Infra il, lo, la, le, &c.* below the —  
*Infin* } *al or a* — as far as the — or until the —  
*Inſin* }  
*In ſù la* — upon the — or in the —  
*Lòngo il* — alongſt the —  
*Lontàno di or del,* far from the —  
*Nel mèzzo del* — in the miſt of the —  
*In mèzzo al* — or *a* — idem.  
*Oltra di or del* — beſides the —  
*Per il or la* — through the —  
*Di quà del or di* — of this ſide of —  
*Raſente il, &c.* cloſe by the —  
*Secòndo il* — &c. according to the —  
*Sòpra il or del* — upon the —  
*Swl,* idem.  
*Sotto il, &c.* under the —  
*Senza il, &c.* without the —  
*Trà il, &c.* 'twixt the —  
*Vèrſo il or di or del* — towards the —  
*Vicinio di or al* — neer unto the —



## Prepositions.

Which are unseparable, or that signifie nothing apart  
from the words to which they are  
prefix'd.

- Ante*—*pôrre*—*antepôrre*, to prefer.  
*Dis*—*pôrre*—*dispôrre*, to dispose.  
*De*—*pôrre*, *depôrre*, to depose.  
*Es*—*pôrre*, *espôrre*, to expose.  
*Inter*—*pôrre*, *interpôrre*, to interpose.  
*Mis*—*fatto*, *misfatto*, a misdeed.  
*Pos*—*pôrre*, *pospôrre*, to put in the last place.  
*Rac*—*côrre*, *raccôrre*, to gather.  
*R*—*allentâre*, *rallentâre*, to slacken.  
*Re*—*spirâre*, *respirâre*, to breath.  
*Ri*—*prêndere*, *riprêndere*, to check or re-assume.  
*S*—*parâre*, *sparâre*, to uncouple or make odde.  
*Stra*—*parlâre*, *straparlâre*, to slander or back-bite.  
*Traf*—*portâre*, *trasportâre*, to transport.

Noté, that *Di á, da*, which seem indefinite articles are Prepositions signifying motion from place to place.

*Di. vengo di casa*, I come from home.

*A. me ne vò á Nápoli*, I go to Naples.

*Da. parto da Venétia*, I go from Venice.

---

*Interjections.*

# Interjections.

Ah, ah, h, ha, ha, ha.

Ahime, woes me.

Ahi, O lack.

Oh, oh, oh, ho, ho, ho,

Gnaffe, so brave.

Bene affè, brave ifaith.

O queſta sì che è bella, this is pretty indeed.

Cape, I marry.

Capperi, idem.

Caterina, idem.

Cazzo, cudſo.

Cocuzze marine, yes I warrant you, Fiddle-  
Rick.

Ah baco, baco, peep ye.

Canchero, pox.

Per cortesia, I beſetch you.

Di grátia, idem.

Oh Dio benedetto, O bleſſed God.

Non ſi può dir più in là, one can ſay no more.

Non ſi può dir più inánzi, idem.

Disgratiato me

Mefchino me

Poverétto me

} wretched me.

Che Diávol è mari queſto, what a Devil can this be, what  
is the matter.

*Che d'òmine*, what a Gods name.

*Ha che fai?* Ha, what art about?

*Eh*, how.

*Fuor de' pièdi*, out of my way.

*Fui, fui*, fie, fie.

*Ha, ha*, so, so.

*Hoi*, cudso.

*Oh còsa brúta*, O base.

*'Ihi*, strange.

*Ha Signor Iddio*, Lord God.

*Lévati di quà*, away hence.

*L'asso mè*, woe's me.

*Madonna Santissima*, Blessed Lady.

*Oibò*, fie.

*Oimè*, O me.

*Polito affè*, brave ifaith, cleverly ifaith.

*Hors-via andi*, away, rinde me.

*Puh*, fie.

*Sia così,* } be it so.

*Così sia,*

*Sì eh?* I, say you me so?

*Buona notte Còla*, good night Gaffer.

*A quèsto módo ah si tratta?* I, thus do you use me?

*O può fàre*, so, if I come to you.

*Bène stà*, its well.

*Lévamiti dinanzi*, out of my sight.

*Creperas vè*, mischief will besal thee.

*Di ch'è forte*, to some tune, to some purpose.

*Viva*, let him live, live he.

*Via,*

*Via*, away.

*Ben bé*, we'll, go to.

*Zitto*, who'st, nor a word.

*Putting the forefinger across ones mouth.*

By these interjections is exprest sorrow or joy, admiration or disdain, provocation or intreaty, as occasion serves.

---

A N  
A P P E N D I  
TO THE  
I N T R O D U C T I O N.

OR,

A Summary of Miscelany Observations; the right and ready understanding of which, presupposes some insight of the Latine Tongue, or at least of terms of Grammar: All which, after a diligent perusal of the former part of this Introduction, may competently be understood, even by weak capacities, I mean, such as had rather learn by rote, than by rule.

I.

Generally, the finite Articles, *il, lo, la, le*, signifie as much as (the) in English, especially in the oblique cases, as *déllo*, of the, *állo*, to the, *dállo* from the, *délle*, *álle*, *dállì*, *állì*, or *dàgli*, &c. it is put after the nature of the

the Greeks, at the beginning of words, rather for ornament than necessity, in relation to sense, though necessary in relation to custom, and so it may signifie as much as (a) in English ; as *l' amico compatisce i difetti dell' amico*, a friend bears with the defects of a friend ; It were absurd to say, *Amico compatisce*, &c. also, *La virtù è da desiderare*, virtue is to be desired, not *virtù è da desiderare*.

## 2.

Homogeneous things, that is, things of the same matter, or substance, also the elements, things of nature, that grow, as fruits of the earth, usually have the finite, *Iddio creò il cielo e la terra*, God created heaven and earth, it were not proper to say, *creò cielo e terra*; and the genitive case of the finite article is us'd, if any uncertain quantity thereof be implied, *Un tal comadino m' ha portato delli fonghi*, a certain Countrey fellow hath brought me some Mushromes ; *dimánom' apparterà delle mele*, to morrow he will bring me some Apples, &c. and in this case it seems to lose the sense of (the) and so also where there is an indefiniteness of numbers, *egli hà de' bei figli*, he hath handsome children ; as also the same finite article serves, when we express a slight of any thing ; as, *le parole non sono che del vento*, words are but some wind ; signifying something more than *le parole non sono che vento* ; and also being put before any appellative noun, it signifieth quantity, part or some of the same, *volète del pane*, will you have some bread? *ò del vino*, or some wine ; but if *poco* be us'd, then use the indefinite article, *di* ; as, *volète, un poco di pane* ? will you have a little bread ? or, *un poco di vino*, a little wine, unless some wine be specified

fiel after *poco*; as, *dámmi un poco del róscia, et un poco del bíanco*, give me a little of the red, and a little of the white, relating to wine, if adverbs of quantity follow the substantive, then the finite article is us'd, not the indefinite, *egli ha de' quattríni assái*, he hath moneys enough, not *egli ha di quattríni assái*.

## 3.

*A, All' Al, 'Allo, 'Alla, Ai, A' 'Agli Alli' Alle*; as *gli, li, le, mi, ti, si, ci, vi, me, te, se, ce, ve, ne*, coming with verbs of privation, signify as much as from, contrary to their natural signification, which is (to) *egli hà leváto la spáda al nimico*, he hath taken away the sword from the enemy; *gli assassíni gli hánno rubbáti i suoi quattríni*, the Thieves have stollen away his moneys.

## 4.

*Da, dal, da', dállì, dágli, dálla, dálle*, following any verb implying motion, so that the person or persons to whom the motion is made or intended, be named, signifies not (from) but (to) or (at) as, *andáte dal médico*, go to the Physician; *veníte da mè*, come to me, *'E íto à star dálla Signóra Vittória*, he is gone to dwell at Mrs. Vittoria's.

## 5.

The finite articles, *da, dai, &c.* serve for adverbs of exception, but then the person or thing excepted must immediately follow the article, with *insuóre*, or else, *in poi*, as *entt; gl' ufficiáli furono scassáti dal Alfiere in poi*, all the Officers



Officers were cashiered, but the Ensign; *Tutte le donne ci pòno entràre d'alle Corteggiàne, infuòri*, all the women may come in but the Courtezans.

## 6.

*Da*, coming before words of number, serves for the preposition *intorno*, or *incirca*; that is, about, or a matter of; as *nella battàglia vi furono da mille feriti, e da cento morti*, in the battel there were about a thousand wounded, and a matter of a hundred kill'd out-right.

## 7.

If the pronoun possessive precede the substantive, the article finite precedes the pronoun; if the pronoun come after, then there is no article prefix to the pronoun, *questa è casa mia*, this is my house, *questa è la mia casa*, &c.

## 8.

*Da*, *frà*, *per*, *in*, *a*, tacitely imply the finite article, *Io discevo frà mio cuore*, I said in my heart; *da necessità costretto*, constrained by necessity, *per mio diletto*, for my pleasure; *si è messo in braccia alla fortuna*, he hath put himself into the arms of fortune, *a suo modo*, after his own way; that is, *frà il mio cuore, dalla necessità costretto per il mio diletto, nelle braccia alla fortuna, al suo modo*.

## 9. Articles

Articles, Nouns, Pronouns and Participles agree with their substantives, in gender number and case, *i frutti acerbi sono stimati malsani*, green fruits are esteemed unwholesome, *le sue belle opere sono quelle che l'hanno immortalato*, his fine works are those which have immortaliz'd him : and if there be two substantives of several genders ; the adjective plural agrees with the worthiest, *il padre e la madre son morti*, the father and the mother are dead ; also, two singulats require a verb plural, as in the example aforesaid, but plainer in this, *Io et il mio compagno sarémo dimani in Bórgo*, my partner and I to morrow will be in the Borough ; *Giovánni, António et Io andássi-mo á spázzo*, John, Anthony, and I went abroad.

## 10.

*Di* is us'd in an ablative sense ; as, *levátosi il capello di capo*, having pull'd off his hat, *viene di Nápoli*, he comes from Naples ; also with pronouns demonstratives, it implies similitude or likeness, *fate di questo*, do thus.

## 11.

The finite article *del, dello, délli, dégli, dalla, delle*, is us'd in the sense of (for) *ringrátio V.S. del favóre*, I thank you for the favor ; not *per il favóre*, as English men are apt to say, *la ringrátio della sua amorevolezza*, I thank you for your kindness ; not *per la sua amorevolezza*.

## 12. The

## 12.

The indefinite article *da*, before infinitives, makes the same to be of a passive signification; as, *carta da scrivere*, writing paper, or paper to be written on; *carne da mangiare*, meat fit to be eaten; *vino da bere*, wine fit to be drunk; and with substantives, it signifies fitness, or propriety, *guanti da huomo e da donna*, gloves fit or proper for men and women, as much as *abile*, able, *atto*, fit, *dégno*, worthy.

## 13.

The finite article never comes before proper names, unless expressing the works of such a person, *il Cicerone*, Tullies works; *il Tasso*, the Poet Tassus his Poems or works.

## 14.

The finite article cometh elegantly before an appellative or adjective, with a proper name after it, for comparison or distinction sake, *il magno Alessándro*, Alexander the great; but if the proper name precede, then the appellative shall have no article; as, *Alessándro magno*: observe withal, that before names of moneths, as at the dating of a letter, the article is elegantly omitted; as, *a dì 20. Decembre, 1656.* the 20. of December, for *alli vinti di Decembre*.

## 15.

Generally the substantive precedes the adjective, as *pan bianco*, white-bread; *vin puro*, pure wine: here custom must be attended where she deviates, as when adjectives imply quality, good or bad, or number, then the adjectives go before their substantives; as, *mille scudi*, a thousand crowns, *brutto negotio*, a scurvy business; *buon compagno*, a good fellow; *bella giornata*, a fair day, *cattiva gente*, ill people; *infelici incontri*, unhappy encounter: the placing alters the sense in many, that the meaning is merely different; as, *huomo gallante*, a brave fellow, *gallante huomo*, a well dealing man; *huomo valente*, a valiant fellow; *valente huomo*, an able fellow in his calling, *robbà buona*, good ware; *buona robbà*, a Courtezan or whore.

## 16.

The finite articles *il*, *lo*, *le*, preceding an adjective, make the same to be a substantive, *il timido*, *l' ammonizione di Brescia non armerebbe*, a fearful body all the arms of Brescia would not suffice to arm relating to persons; if relating to things or qualities, the abstract or substantive is meant thereby; *diceffi mai il vero*, would thou wouldst once speak truth; rather than *la verità*; *col vivo del cuore*, with a zealous heart, rather than *viverza del cuore*, the liveliness of the heart.

## 17.

Of known adjectives, ending in *te, ro, re*, you make adverbs of quality, namely, by taking away (*e*) adding *mente* to them, as *facilménte*, easily; not *facileménte*: *leggerménte*, lightly, not *leggeroménte*, *particolarménte*, particularly, not *particolareménte*: but feminine adjectives ending in (*a*) make adverbs onely by adding *mente* to them; as, *savíva*, wife, *saviaménte*, wisely; *sánta*, holy, *santaménte*, holily.

## 18.

Generally names of trees are of the masculine gender, and the fruits of the feminine; as, *péro*, a Pear-tree, *péra*, a Pear.

## 19.

Substantives may be made adjectives, implying action or passion, by taking away the last vowel; providing it be not an (*o*) and putting *óso* to it; as, *paura*, fear, *pauróso*, fearful; *amóre*, love, *amoróso*, loving, or amorous: but when they end in (*o*) put onely (*so*) to it; as, *bisógno*, need, *bisognóso*, needful, or needy: and if you would have the adjective to express chiefly passion, turn the last vowel into (*e*) in case it should not end so, and put *vóle* to it; as, *bisógno*, need, *bisognévole*, full of need, or that may be needful; *gústto*, taste, *gustévole*, well tasted; *búrta*, a jest, *burlévole*, that may be jested with. To the same purpose, if you will have the adjective to end in (*bile*) if the substantive end in (*a*) put *bíle* to it; as *scúsa*, an excuse, *sensábile*, excusable: if in any other vowel, then take away

away that vowel, and put *ábile* to it; as *lódz*, praise; *lodábile*, praisable: otherwise this adjective (*ábile*) may be fram'd of the third person, present tense, indicative, mood of verbs of the first conjugation; as, *áma*, he loveth, *amábile*, that may be loved.

## 20.

Taking the participle of the preterperfect tense of any verb active, and putting (*re*) unto the same, you frame a substantive that expresses action; as, *amátore*, loved, *amátore*, a lover: which may be also made of a feminine gender, by changing *tóre* into *tríce*: *amatóre*, a lover, *amatríce*, a she-lover, or lovers; *rettó*, governed, *rettóre*, a governor, *rettríce*, a governess. Also by taking the third person of the present tense indicative mood of the first conjugation, and the second person singular of the same tense of any verb of the other three conjugations, and putting any noun-substantive to the same, you express the instrument, and also the artificer of the same: *Scálda-vivánde*, a chafing dish, *pórtá-léttere*, a letter-carrier; *cápi-fuóchi*, hand-irons: and also the substantive is of the plural number, though not often, as, *scopri-secréto*, a blab or tell-tale, *scálda-létto*, a warming-pan, for *scopri-secréto scálda-létto*.

## 21.

Taking away from masculine words belonging to any Art or trade, the last vowel, and adding *áro*, or *áio* to it, you express the professor or the artificer of the same; as, *libro*, a book, *libráro*, a bookseller, or *libraío*, *capéllo*, a hat, *capelláro*, or *capellaío*, a hat-maker or seller. And

to express the feminine turn *áro* or *áo*, into *ára* or *áia*, saying *capellára*, or *capelláia*, a woman that makes or sell<sup>s</sup> hats. Also, any substantive or adjective, or verb, ending in (*a*) put *ruólo* to it, and you express the artificer, *frúta*, fruit, *fruttaruólo*, a fruit seller; *bárcá*, a boat, *bárcaruólo*, a boatman; *pízzica*, he pileth up, *pízzicaruólo*, one that retailereth as a chandler: and also, in many, *aruólo* may be turn'd into *ainólo*; as, *legnaruólo*, a woodmonger, *legnainólo*.

## 22.

From feminine nouns ending in (*a*) by adding (*ro*) or (*io*) thereto, you likewise express the artificer; as, *spáda*, a sword, *spadáro*, or *spadáio*, a cutler; *bottegá*, a shop, *bottegaró*, or *bottegaíó*, a shopkeeper: change (*ro*) or (*io*) into (*ra*) or (*ia*) and you make the feminines of the same; as *spadára*, or *spadáia*, a woman cutler, *bottegará*, *bottegaíia*, a woman shopkeeper.

## 23.

From all names of tools and instruments, by which it is possible to strike; or otherwise to express capacity and fulness of any thing or place, or the worth or value of any coyn, if masculine, taking away the last vowel, and adding thereto *áta*, you express the power and effect, or blow or worth of the same; as, *arcobúgio*, a gun; *arcobugiáta*, a gunshot; *bastóne*, a cudgel, *bastonáta*, a blow with a cudgel; *sázzo*, a stone; *sassáta*, a stone cast, or a blow with a stone; *capéllo*, a hat, *capelláta*, a hatful; *baiócco*, a Roman penny, *baioccáta*, a pennyworth: but if feminine, the vowel remains, and onely *ta* is added;

as, *lancia*, a lance, *lanciata*, a thrust with a lance; *carrozza*, a coach, *carrozzata*, a coach-ful.

## 24.

Putting *alla* to an adjective of the feminine gender, you express the similitude or likeness of any thing, or the fashion or custom of any thing, person, or place; as, *all' Italiána*, after the Italian fashion; *alla tedesca*, after the German fashion; *alla Francése*, after the French fashion; *alla reale*, royally, really, *all' antica*, after the old fashion, *alla Cardinale*, Cardinal-like: where observe, that *Cardinale* is an adjective.

## 25.

Putting *da* before any substantive, whether masculine or feminine, hath the same force as *alla* before an adjective; *sfoggia da Principe*, he lays it on like a Prince, *sta da Principessa*, she dwells Princess-like.

## 26.

In certain expressions implying doubt, or condition, instead of *Io*, I; *tù*, thou, *egli*, he; *ella*, she: *me*, *te*, *lui* and *lei*, are rather us'd as, *Tùl' hai riverito pensando che fusse me*, thou salutedst him, thinking 'twas I; nor, *Io: egli m' ha riverito pensando che fossi te*, he saluted me, thinking 'twas thee, *Se Io fossi lui farei altrimenti*, If I were he, I would do otherwise, nor, *Se fossi egli; Se stessee a lei di parlare*, if it were for her to speak, nor, *se stessee a ella*.

## 27. The



## 27.

The conjunctive pronouns, or pronoun particles, *mi, ti, si, ci, vi, ne*, if they follow verb, gerund or participle, are incorporated with the same, if they precede the verb, they are written apart; as, *mi scrivo*, he writes to me; *scrivemi*: but they cannot immediately precede a gerund or participle, positively speaking; as *mi dicendo*, but *dicéndomi*; *mi pentito*; but *pentitomi*: Note, that if *ne, lo, la, li, gli, le*, come between, then the (*i*) of the particles is turned into (*e*) *me ne scrivo*, he writes me of it; *scrivemene*, not *mi ne scrivo*, or *scrivemine*: see more of this in the table to that Purpose.

## 28.

The pronoun personal is generally understood in verbs, after the manner of the Latines; *scrivo a V. S.*, I write to you; *parlo di poco*, I speak of little: yet in verbs reciprocal, it seems more graceful to express the pronoun, *Io non m'inganno*, I do not mistake or deceive my self; *egli s'affatica come un cane*, he labours like a dog.

## 29.

The finite articles, *il, lo, i, li, gli, la, le*, in the dative and accusative cases assume the nature of pronouns relatives, *quando il viddi*, when I saw him; *quando gli parlásti*, when thou spakést to him, &c. *havete visto l'amico?* have you seen our friend? *Signor sí l'ho visto*, yes Sir, I have seen him,

## 30.

Pronouns possessives in the singular number, express with a substantive, and with a finite article of the singular number imply goods or wealth, or the estate of a body ; as, *son patrón del mío*, I am master of my own; *il tuo lo puoi dar a chi tu vuoi*, thy estate thou mayst bestow on whom thou wilt : but if the pronouns possessives be express in the plural number, and the finite article likewise in the plural, then they signify relations of kindred or friends, *la più parte delli miei son ancor vivi per grátia di Dio*, the greatest number of my relations are as yet alive, by the grace of God, *I tuoi son mórti*, thy relations are dead.

## 31.

The finite article, whether masculine or feminine, singular or plural, is frequently put before possessive pronouns, which concord with their substantives that follow them, in case, gender and number, *il mío cavállo*, my horse; *il tuo, il suo, il nostro, il vostro, il loro*, thine, his, ours, yours, theirs ; *i miei cavállo*, my horses ; *i tuoi, suoi, i nostri, i vostri, i loro*, thine, his, ours, yours, theirs ; *la mia carózza*, my coach, *la tua, la sua, la nostra, la vostra, la loro*, thine, his, ours, yours, theirs ; *le mie carózze*, my coaches ; *le tue, le sue, le nostre, le vostre, le loro*, his, ours, yours, theirs: sometimes the indefinite article is only us'd, as, *di mia máno*, of my hand, &c. *a mío módo*, after my own way ; *da mío fratello*, from my brother, the like of *tuo, suo, &c.*

## 32. Two

32.

Two negatives deny most, whereas in Latine they affirm, *Hauete visto niente in piazza?* Saw you nothing in the street? answer, *Io non hò visto nulla*, I saw nothing at all, or in the least.

33.

When *nè* serves for an adverb of distinction or denial, it is accented, and usually it is iterated; as, *questa medicina nè mi giova, nè mi nuoce*, this physick neither doth me good or hurt: when it signifies an adverb of place, namely, coming before or after verbs of motion, implying as much as hence, or thence, or away; it is written without an accent, *egli se ne viene àlla volta nostra*, he is coming thence towards us; *vattene per i fatti tuoi*, get thee hence about thy business, and coming before or after verbs that imply not motion, it signifies as much as at it, or, of it, *se ne ride*, he laughs at it, *se ne lamenta*, he complains of it; also written without an accent, it signifies as much as us, or, for us; being become a pronoun of the dative and accusative cases plural *egli ne diède il buon dì e'l buon anno*, he gave us the good day, and good year; *havèndone visti sú bito ne sfuggì*, having seen us, presently he shun'd us: for matter of knowing when it relates to person or place, the sense must declare it. The same is also us'd as an adverb of quantity, for an abbreviation, and to avoid tautologies, signifying some, part of the some, whereof, or of them, *voi m'havete ricercato di certe cose che se Io ne havessi voi ne sareste patrone, ma non havèndone voi me ne havete per iscusato*,

R 3

you

you have ask'd me about certain things, that if I had any, you should be master of them; but having not any of them, you will excuse me for the same. When it is apostrophiz'd, as, *ne'*, the masculine finite article (*si*) is understood, *hórane' prati non si truova un pñoco d' herba per miracolo*, now in the fields there's not to be seen a handful of grass, if one would give never so much; also it is apostrophiz'd when it is put interrogatively, *e vero n' è?* it is true, is't not?

## 34.

*Si*, generally hath these three qualities, it makes verbs passives, *si áma la virtù*, virtue is beloved; or, *áma si la virtù*: or it makes verbs recipocall, being affixed to verbs, gerunds or participles relating to persons, as, *egli si raccórda*, he remembers himself; *raccórdarsi*, to remember ones self; *raccórdandosi*, remembering ones self; *raccórdatosi*, having remembred himself; and so of the passives: and it makes verbs to be impersonal; as, *si dice che sia seguita una gran battáglia*, they say, or it is said, that there hath been a great battel: but it also hath some other significations; as, usually it is an adverb of affirmation, as *si Signór*, or *Signór si*, *si Signóra*, *Signóra si*, yes Madam, yes Sir; and then it is accented: also it is an adverb of comparison, or similitude, signifying so, or, as well; as, *canagliera si avventurato non fu mai*, there was never such, or so fortunate a Gentleman: or sometimes an adverb of quantity, signifying as well, as much; *ambo felici, si la móglie come, si'l marito*, both happy, as well the wife as the husband; *Io m' adopro si per il vostro interesse quanto per il mio*, I endeavor as well for your interest as my own; and then it is also accented: sometimes it signifies

signifies yet, or nevertheless, *se per altro non mi vuoi amare, si amami perché ti son parente*, if thou wilt love me for no end, yet love me because I am thy kinsman: also then it is accented. Lastly observe, that it is more elegantly put before the auxiliary verb, than after the infinitive mood following; as it is more elegant and usual in discourse, to say, *si può veramente lodar questa móda*. This fashion may truly be commended, rather than *può veramente lodar si questa móda*.

## 35.

The particles *di, e, egli, ei, ben, ne, già pur, me, che, il*, have very oft no signification, and are onely put or inserted into a phrase, for ornament-sake; as, *vi sono di molti che nòlla credono questa nova*, there are many who believe not this news, &c.

## 36.

As *gli*, accompanied with *ne, la, lo, le*, serves in the singular number, both to masculines and feminines; *gliene parlai*, I spake to him or her of it; *gliela diedi*, I gave it him or her; *glielo scrissi*, I writ it him or her: so it serves in the dative plural, both to masculines and feminines, signifying as much as *loro* to them, specially the particle (*se*) (that is (*si*) the (*s*) turn'd into (*e*) preceding, which causeth an impersonality or passivation, *non hanno vino ma se gliene darà*, they have no wine, but there shall be some given them: where *them* may relate to either gender, *il presente è ammanito però se glielo potrà mandare*, the present is ready, and therefore it may be sent them.

## 37.

To interrogations made of *di d'ove*? that is, whence are you? what Countreyman are you? if it be of a general place, as of a Kingdom or Commonwealth, answer is made by *di*; as, *Di d'ove s'ete?* answer, *di Itàlia, di Spàgna*, of Italy, of Spain, that is as much as *Italiàno*, an Italian, *Spagnuolo*, a Spaniard: but if of a particular place, as of some Town or City, or so; then answer is best made by *da*; as, *di d'ove s'ete?* whence are you? answer, *da Albàno, da Tivoli*, of Alban, or of Tivoli, some say, *da d'ove s'ete?*

## 38.

Verbs that imply addition or application to any thing; as verbs of coming, feeling, going, exhorting, studying, learning, indenting, beginning, making, forcing, preparing, inviting, moving, perswading, inventing, require rather *a* or *ad*, after them then *di* (to) *comincio a capire*, I begin to conceive or apprehend, not *di capire*: *egli si prepara a combattere*, he prepares himself to fight: *ti affretti troppo ad arricchire*, thou mak'st too much haste to be rich; not *di combattere*. *di arricchire*: *mi pongo a sedere perché son stracco*, I set me down because I am weary; not *di sedere*: *mi avveggo a parlare*, I use my self to speak; not *di parlare*; the like of *mi sforzo*, I force my self; *mi trattengo*, I stay; *mi ritardo*, I linger; *sto*, I stand, or am; *consiglio*, I counsel; *supplico*, I intreat; *arrivo*, I arrive; *persuado*, I perswade; *efforto*, I exhort; *stimolo*, I provoke; *vengo*, I come; *seguo*, I follow: all better with *a*, or *ad*, than *di*.

## 39.

39. The masculine finite article put before an infinitive, makes the same to assume the nature of a substantive, or a gerund in english; as, *il parlare di sonnerchio è segnale di pazzia*, excessive speech, or over much speaking, is a sign of folly or madness: the like if it be joyned with any preposicion or pronoun demonstrative; as, *col studiare s'impára*, that is, *con lo studiare*, &c. by studying one learns; *quel parlar tanto al último stracca*, that speaking so much, at last wearieth.

## 40.

All phrases or expressions which suppose a thing to be certain, the conjunction (*che*) following the same, require the indicative mood, not the subjunctive mood; as, *sò*, or *conosco*, I know; *vèdo*, I see; *affirmo*, I affirm; *accòrge*, I perceive; *ossérvo*, I observe; *òdo*, I hear; *sénto*, I feel; *tòcco*, I touch; *gústo*, I taste; *tásto*, I feel; *truóvo*, I find; *giú dico*, I judge; *raccònto*, I relate; *manténgo*, I maintain; as, *so che dici la verita*, or, *il véro*, I know thou say'st true, &c. But these following, *pénso*, I think; *crédo*, I believe; *stímo*, I suppose; *dúbito*, I doubt; *mi rallegro*, I am glad; *mi dolgo*, I am sorry; *mi maraviglio*, I wonder, after the conjunction (*che*) either the indicative or subjunctive, may indifferently follow, *Io penso che è donna honorata*, I think she is an honest woman; or, *che sia donna honorata*: but if a negative particle come before these, then its best the subjunctive follow (*che*) as, *non pensate che Io sia così trascurato*, *che non sappia il fatto mio*, do not think that I am so overseen, as that I know not

not my interest; or what is best for me; though some verbs are indifferent to *a*, *ad*, *di*, or *che*.

## 41.

Verbs generally have after them *a*, *ad*, or *di*, with an infinitive, or else (*che*) with a subjunctive, *Prêgo V. S. a fârmî quèsta grátia*, I pray your Lordship to do me this favor; *la prêgo di fârmî quèsta grátia*, I pray you to do me the favor; or, *la prêgo che mi fâccia quèsta grátia*, I pray you that you would be pleased to do me the favor; or, *la prêgo che mi vòglia far la grátia* Use must make perfectness in these occasions.

## 42.

*Per*, with an infinitive, or any perfect tense of the same, implies causality or reason, wherefore any thing is done, or hath been done, *fâ liberâto per ésser foréstièrè*, he was freed, because he was a stranger; *fû giustitiâto per havér assassinato*, he was executed for having rob'd and murther'd, or because he rob'd and murther'd; *mi son mèsso a tavola per ésser che non sêse venûto al hóra determinâta*, I sate me down to meat, forasmuch as you came not at the appointed hour.



## 43.

When the present tense of the indicative mood is us'd, then the present tense of the subjunctive mood answers to it, *egli mi prega che Io li faccia quel servizio*, he intreats me to do him that civility; not *che li facessi*; but if the preterimperfect tense, or preterperfect tenses of the indicative mood be us'd, then the preterimperfect tense of the subjunctive answers to it; as, *egli mi pregava con istanza che Io li facessi quel servizio*, he prayed me earnestly, that I would do him that civility; not *li faccia*. Also, *mi pregò*, or, *m' hauea pregato che li facessi*, &c. he prayed me, or had prayed me, that I would, &c.

## 44.

The infinitives of verbs, may lose their last vowel, *amár*, *godér*, *legger*, *sentír*, unless they end a period; then, *amáre*, *godére*, *leggere*, *sentire*: the like of noun substantives or adjectives ending in *áre* or *óre*, *mi fa*, *favór particoláre*, *mi fa particolár favóre*, writing the word at length still, if it end the period; *il bel morir tutta la vita honóra*, a noble death, crowns a mans whole life; *amór fa'l bel servíre*, love makes service pleasant.

## 45.

The verbs, *sapere*, to know or be able, *fare*, to do, *dovere*, to ought, *accadere*, to happen, *sovere*, to be wont, are seldom or never express'd with (*di*) as, *egli sa parlar latino*, he can speak latine; not, *sa di parlar latino*, *sa scrivere una mano corsiva*, he can write a running hand, not *sa di scrivere*: though it is proper to say, *sa di latino*, he hath skill in the latine; or *sa di scrittura*, he understands writing, &c. *di*, is generally us'd after a substantive; as, *ha voglia di magnare*, he hath a minde to eat; *ha l' animo di mortificar mi*, his minde is to punish me; not, *ha voglia a magnare*; or, *ha animo a mortificar mi*.

## 46.

The particle *si*, is elegantly put before the auxiliar, which is due to the infinitive; as, *queste cose non si hanno da dire*, these things ought not to be said, instead of *non hanno da dir si*: *queste cose non si possono dire*, these things cannot be said, instead of *non possono dir si*: *la lezione si ha da imparar a mente*, the lesson is to be learnt by heart, instead of *ha da imparar si a mente*.

## 47.

The verbs, *póſſo*, I can; *vóglío*, I will, being accompanied with reciprocals, admit either of the auxilar verbs, *háuere*, to have; or, *éſſere*, to be: if they have the pronoun particles after them, then they take the verb, *háuere*; as, *Io non ho potuto attribuir mi tal lode*, I have not been able to attribute to my ſelf ſuch praiſe: but if the pronoun particle precede, then the verb *éſſere* is us'd, as, *non mi ſon voluto attribuir tal lode.*

## 48.

There being neuters actives. and neuters paſſives, heed is to be taken in the right uſe of them; for the active neuters in their compound preterperfect tenſes are joyned with the verb *háuere*, to have; as, *ho caminato*, I have gone, walkt, or march'd; not, *ſon caminato*, *hò dormito*, I have ſlept, not *ſon dormito*; *ho potuto*, I have been able, not *ſon potuto*; *ho dovuto*, I have ow'd, not *ſon dovuto*; *hò nocciuto*, I have offended or done hurt unto, not *ſon nocciuto*; *hò voluto*, I have been willing; [not *ſon voluto*: whereas paſſive neuters in their compound preterperfect tenſes are joyn'd with the verb *éſſere*, as, *Io ſono ſtato*, I have been, not, *Io hò ſtato*; *Io ſono andato*, I have gone, not *Io hò andato*; *Io ſono entrato*, I have entred, not *hò entrato*; *ſono uſcito*, I am gone out, or I went out, not *hò uſcito*; *ſon nato*, I was born, not *hò nato*; *ſon reſtato* or *rimaſto*, I tarried or remained, not *hò reſtato* or *rimaſto*; *ſon ritornato*, I returned, not *hò ritornato*; *ſon volato*, I have flown, not *hò volato*: And theſe are onely paſſive by name, in as much as they aſſume to them the verb *éſſere*,

to

to them, but in effect they are actives : and to this purpose observe, that neuter passives, so called, in their compound preterperfect tenses, have or ought to have their passive participle agreeing in gender and number with their agent, *due fanci uelli son nati ad un parto*, two children born at a birth; *la Signóra è uscita in carrózza*, my Lady is gone out in a coach : whereas in the neuters active it is not necessary so to be ; as, *i patróni hanno havuto bel tempo*, our masters have had fair weather, not *havuti bel tempo*, *la Signóra ha partorito due figli ad un parto*, my Lady hath brought forth two children at a birth ; not, *partorita* or *partoriti*; *ha penato a partorire*, she hath had pains in her delivery, not *penata*. observe also neuters may assume either of the auxiliars, *essere*, or *avere*, *Io mi son fatto male*, I have done my self hurt; or, *mi hò fatto male*.

## 49.

The verb *fare*, when it signifies to play, act, or represent any person or thing, sometimes requires an accusative case ; as, *costui fa il pedante*, this fellow plays or acts the pedant ; sometimes the genitive, as, *costui fa del pedante*.

## 50.

Verbs of giving or privation, recommending, promising or interceding, besides an accusative case of the thing, require a dative case of the person ; as, *Io gli hò imparato la Retórica*, I have taught him Rhetorick; *egli mi ha levato il pane*, he hath taken away my bread or livelihood, &c.

51. These

51.

These verbs, *havère, toccare, pizzicare, sapere*, are put with a genitive case, and the finite article, when they are meant to express either simplicity or confidence; as, *ha del ignorante*, he hath something of a dull man in him; *tocca del Francese*, he hath a touch of the French humor; *pizzica del villano*, he hath somewhat of a Clown in him; *sa del pedante*, its pedantical.

52.

What ever tense the question is of the answer ought to be in the same, *dove andasse biéri?* where wentst thou yesterday? answer, *andai fuor di Róma*, I went out of Rome.

53.

One may command or intreat in the following ways: speaking to an equal, use the second person plural of the present tense indicative mood; *parlate forte acciò che vi senta*, speak loud, that I may hear you: also by the second person plural of the present tense of the subjunctive mood of any verb, *sappiatemelo dire a tempo se volete venire*, tell it me in time, or give me notice in time whether you come, or if you come; speaking to a superior or much honored friend, use the third person of the subjunctive mood present tense, *V. S. mi dica il suo parere*, be pleas'd to tell me your opinion; if speaking to more than one, *dicano le Signorie loro i loro pareri*, be pleas'd my masters to speak your opinions; speaking to an inferior, or else a bosom friend, use the imperative, *vá presto, camina*, go quickly, march away, *parla piano*, speak softly.

54. The

## 54.

The ways of forbidding or dissuading are as follows: speaking to an equal, use the second person plural of the present tense of the indicative mood, and prepose thereto the negative particle (*non*) *non andate che ve ne pentiréte*, do not go, for you'll repent you of it; also you may use the auxiliar verb *volere*, in the second person plural of the subjunctive mood, present tense, putting thereto the negative (*non*) *non vogliate dire quèste cose ad un par mio*, I pray do not offer to tell these things to such a one as I; speaking to a superior, or much honored friend, use the third person singular of the subjunctive mood, present tense, with the negative particle; as, *non dica quèsto per grátia*, say not so, I beseech you, Sir; *non vada che é tardi*, do not go, Sir, for it is late; if speaking to more than one, then, *non dicano quèsto lor àltri Signóri*, *non vadano*, *che é tardi*, say not this, my masters, go not, for it is late; speaking to an inferior or intimate friend, put the negative particle to the infinitive mood; as, *non fare quèsti spropositi che non ti riasciranno*, commit not such absurdities, they will not fadge; *non dir quèsto a niissuno*, do not tell this to any body.

## 55.

The negative (*non*) and the pronoun particle, are elegantly put betwixt *di*, and the infinitive mood, *egli fa finta di non mi vedére*, he makes as though he sees me not, instead of, *fa finta di non vedérmi*.

## 56.

The gerund accompanied with these two verbs *stò*, I stand, or am, *vò*, I go, is not onely proper, but emphatical; as, *stò scrivendo lettere al paese*, I am writing letters home to my countrey; *vò facendo delle righe*, I am drawing of lines; rather than, *Io scrivo al paese*, or *Io fo delle righe*.

## 57.

The gerund usually hath noun, or pronoun after it; as, *sapendo lui che è robba di contrabando non dovrebbe comprarne*, he knowing that it is a prohibited commodity, should not buy any of it.

## 58.

No pronoun particle precedes a gerund; unless *non* precedes the particle; as, *non gli dicendo il vero come vuoi che egli sappia giudicare*, you not telling him the truth, how would you have him judge.

## 59.

*Essendo* and *havendo* are elegantly omitted, both in discourse and writing, and the passive particle *us'd*, which agrees in gender and number with the substantive; as *fatto le feste tornerò a studiare*, when the holy days are done, or are over, I'll study again; instead of *essendo fatte le feste*, the holidays being ended; *fatto pranzo farò a voi*, when dinner is done, or as soon as dinner is ended, I'll be  
 S with

with you, or for you; instead of *havendo pranzato*, having dined: also *subito* is elegantly put before the participle. *subito pranzato andar a dormire è mal sano*, as soon as one hath sup'd, to go to bed is unwholesome.

## 60.

The passive participle is elegantly us'd with the conjunction *che*, following the same, and the futures *havèrò*, *farò*, I shall have, or shall be; as, *finita che havèrò la lettione me n' andarò à spasso*, as soon as my lesson is done, I'll go abroad; instead of *quando havèrò finita la lettione*, which is the future with the substantive and the participle may either agree in gender with the substantive or not, it being no errour to say, *finito che havèrò, la lettione*; but the other seems more graceful: Also the passive participle is elegantly us'd after the third person singular, or plural of the verbs, *andare*, to go; or *venire*, to come; as *la lettera non va adoperata nè con maestri nè con medici*, niggardliness ought not to be us'd, either with masters or phisicians; *le cose vanno fatte a questo modo*, things ought to be done after this manner; *se mi venisse fatto*, if it should fall out part for me; *se mi verranno scritte le nuove*, if the news shall be written to me.



## 61.

The passive participle in compound senses of verbs, is us'd without regard to gender or number, if the verb have a neuter signification; as, *n' ha consolato quei pochi che stàvano per d' sperarsi*, he hath comforted a good many who were like to despair; *come ha ben capito i nostri modi di dire*; how well he hath apprehended our manner of speaking; *mia madre ha infantata hogg*, my mother was brought to bed to day, not *infantata*: but if the verb have a transitive sense, &c that the accusative case hath a passive dependence from the same, then the participle may elegantly agree with the substantive, in case gender and number; *ho scritte queste lettere a posta per dar parte a V. S. di quanto è seguito qui fra noi*, I have written unto you these letters, for to acquaint you of what hath hapned here among us: you may also indifferently say, *ho scritto queste lettere*, as already hath been hinted; but if the participle be absolutely passive, and that it come with the verb *essere*; as you may see in the conjugation of the passive verb, then the participle agrees in case, gender, and number with its substantive: *Io sono scritto al libro*, I am set down in the book, if a man speak, *Io sono scritta al libro*, if a woman speak, *noi siamo scritti al libro*, we are set down in the book, if men speak, *noi siamo scritte al libro*, if women speak.

## 62.

The active participle is us'd rather in the nature of a substantive, than as a participle; as *vivente*, is rather a person, than the act of living: *ogni vivente*, every living creature: for when we express such a one being living, the gerund *do* is us'd; as, *vivendo la matrigna non c'è da far bene*, the mother in law yet living, there's no good to be done; rather than *vivente la matrigna*: and though it were not an error in syntax, yet it were an error in propriety; and though it may have been us'd, yet it is not imitable.

## 63.

Gerunds generally assume the nature of noun adjectives; as, *Reverendo Padre*, reverend Father, *stupendo pensiero*, an admirable conceit,

## 64.

The Gerund many times is accompanied with the preposition (*in*) *in passando gliene farò motto* as I pass by, I'll give him notice of it; which is as much as, *nel passare*, in the passage, or in passing.

## 65. When

65.

When *si* is added or incorporated with any third person of any verb singular or plural, or to any infinitive mood the last vowel of the said verb is to be omitted; as, *si dicono*, are said; *diconsi*, not *diconosi* *da qui può argomentarsi*, hence it may be argued, nor, *argomentarsi*; and besides, the accent never removes from the first place, though it be position.

66.

Putting *pure* after any verb, specially in the sense of entreaty or command, you urge and provoke to that purpose; as, *Dite pure il fatto vostro*, speak but your business, out with it confidently, *Entro pure*, Be pleased to come in, here is no danger.

67.

These following particles, *mi, ti, si, lui, lor, ci, ed, ne, lo, la, gli, l, le*, are plac'd properly, immediately after the infinitive gerund, participle, or imperative of any verb, and not so properly betwixt the preposition, the infinitive gerund, participle, or imperative; as, *per farmi piacere*, to do me a pleasure; not, *per mi far piacere*, *facéndomi piacere*, doing me a pleasure; not *mi facéndolo piacere* *fattemi piacere*, having done me a pleasure; not *mi fatto piacere*, *fattemi piacere*, do me a pleasure, use me kindly; not *mi fare piacere*, and so consequently of the rest of the specified particles.

## 68.

The pronoun particles *mi, ti, si, &c.* are more proper to be used than the pronouns, *me, te, se,* except some emphasis or distinction be implied; as, *se incolpa d'ogni cosa,* he blames himself for every thing; *te chiamo in testimònio* I call thee to witness.

## 69.

Where the English interrogations say, whose? Italians say, *di chi*; as, *di chi è quel cavallo?* whose horse is that? answer, *è del Signór Cavagliér Antonio,* Sir *Anthony's*; or *del suo Signór zio,* or your Uncles.

## 70.

The usual questions about distances of place are such, *quánto si fa sin a Nápoli?* how far is it counted to Naples? *quante giornate pónno ésser da qui a Loréto?* how many days journey can it be from hence to Loreto? *in quánto tempo si può mai andár a Venétia?* how long, or in how long time can one be going to Venice? answer is made, *tánte míglia,* so many miles; *tánte giornate,* so many days journey; *in tánti giòrni,* in so many days.

71.

With verbs of motion, after the nature of the Latines, *in hac* and *illuc*, we use *quà* & *là*, and with verbs of rest *qui* and *lì* answering to, *h.c* & *illie*; but the vulgar useth either promiscuously; the best way and the safest, is according to the Latines, *pàssa quà*, come hither; rather than *pàssa qui*, *và là*, go yonder; rather than *và li: dove è?* where is he? *è qu.*, he is here, not *quà*, *é li*, he is there, not *là*.

72.

The conjunction *che* is elegantly preposed to participles, either when one would bless or curse, *che benedette sian le poppe che gli diédono latte*, blessed be the breasts that gave him suck; *che maladetto sia il pònto e l'hòra che nacque*, cursed be the minute or hour that he was born: also *che* is us'd for *perché*, why? but among the conjunctions, the examples will be more ready.

73.

When *che* is doubled, it is very elegantly put for what in; as, *fùrono ammazzati dièci mila, che in fànti che in cavaglièri*, there were ten thousand kill'd, what in foot, what in horse.

74. The

## 74.

The preposition *di*, in an expression that implys negation or denial, hath the meaning of *avanti*, before ; as, *egli non ritornerà di tre mesi*, he will not return these three moneths, or before these three moneths be expired : *di* signifies *upon*, applied to the day of the week, *in Domenica*, on a Sunday.

## 75.

When *di* comes before any word, signifying time or season of the year, it signifies as much as *in* ; *di giorno*, *di notte*, in the day time, or in the night time ; *di state*, in summer ; *d'inverno*, in winter.

## 76.

The preposition *in* is prefix to words signifying motion or rest ; as, *è ito in piazza*, he is gone into the place or street ; or also it signifies rest, express without any article ; as *egli è in casa*, he is at home, or in the house.

## 77.

The negative *non* is put in answer, when the verb is repeated; as, *sete stato a Palazzo?* have you been at Court? answer, *Non ci son stato*, I have not been there; but *no* is but in answer, when nothing else follows; *volite venire?* will you come? answer, *no*, not.

## 78.

The preposition *per* is local, sometimes, as, *egli camina per Roma*, he walks in Rome, or through the streets of Rome, or about Rome; or *camina per la camera*, he walks in the chamber, or about the chamber.

## 79.

The same preposition serves by way of distribution or division; *un piccione per gentiluomo*, every man a pigeon; *un scudo per ano*, a crown a piece.

## 80.

The same preposition with verbs, that imply not motion, signifies as much as in, or all over ; as, *egli si sente una doglia per tutta la vita*, he feels an ach in, or all over his body.

## 81.

The preposition *re* of the Latines, in compounds before a single consonant, for the most part changeth *e* into *i* ; as, *renouare* to renew ; *rinouare* ; but before double consonants, it changeth not ; as, *respirare*, to breath ; *restare*, to remain ; *restituire*, to restore, being the same both in Latine and Italian, except *risplendere*, to shine ; *rispondere*, to answer ; not *resplendere*, *respondere*.

## 82.

The prepositions *in*, *is*, *dis*, *mis*, *s*, added to any active or passive verb, or otherwise to any noun substantives adjective or participle, the same becometh of a privative sense ; as, *Indisposto*. indisposed ; *Is-memorato* ; forgetful ; *dis-fatto*, undone : *mis-credente*, an unbeliever ; *sfacendato*, idle, out of employment ; yet in some the *s* doth not make privation, but a gentle position ; as, *forzare*, to force, *sforzare*, to force the more ; *correre*, to run, *scorrere*, to over run.

## 83. These



## 83.

These prepositions (*a* to *e*) and (*ô*) or, if they come before words beginning with vowels, the (*a*) receives a (*d*) the (*e*) a *r*, or (*a d*) the (*ô*) a *d* for the pleasantness of pronunciation; *scrivo ad Andréa*, I write to *Andrew*; *ed António* and to *Antony* *ô lui ed alcun altro*, either he or some other.

---

THE

# A Series of Words that derive more immediately from the Latine than before hath been exprest.

**P**recipitosus, precipitose, precipitous.

*Faba faba*, a bean.

*Sancto, sanco*, holy.

*Doctrina, dottrina*, doctrine.

*Clave, Ch'ave*, a key.

*Sedeo séggo* or *séggio*, I sit.

*Deo, Dio*, God.

*Nepote, n'pote*, a nephew. or neece.

Where it is to be observed, that in Latine words of the third declension, the ablative case is the nominative in Italian, and consequently in all the oblique cases, where the signification is the same quite throughout the Language, excepting the transmutation of Letters, except *ghianda*.

*Renuntio, rinúntio*, I renounce.

*Equale, uguale, ignale*, equal.

*Glande, ghianda*, an Acorn.

*Mungere, m'gnere*, to milk.

*Pungere, p'gnere*, to prick, or gore.

*Ungere, 'lgnere*, to anoint.

*Hierarchia, Gierarchia*, an Hierarchy.

*Littera, lettera*, a letter or epistle.

*Damno, d'anno*, damage:

Where

Where it is to be observed, that in Latine words of the second declension, the ablative case is the nominative in Italian, and consequently in all the oblique cases, where the signification is the same quite throughout the Language, excepting the transmutation of Letters.

*Veneno, veleno*, poyson.

*Officio, ufficio*, a duty.

*Scripta, scrissi*, I wrote.

*Paupertas, povertà*, poverty.

*Philosophus, Filosofo*, a Philosopher.

*Torquere, torcere*, to wrest or skrew.

*Ambrosio Ambrogio*, Ambrosé.

*Ratione, ragione*, reason.

*Pater, padre*, a father.

*Theophilus, Teófilo*, Theophilus.

*Maxilla, masella*, a jaw-bone.

A Series of such Verbs as usually trouble those most, who understand the Latine Tongue best; in regard the signification being one and the same, they are notwithstanding of different conjugations, as may appear by the accents exprest on them on purpose.

Lat.

Ital.

*C*Adere, to fall, *Cadère.*  
*C*âpere, to hold or contain, *Capère.*  
*S*âpere, to be wise, *Sapère.*  
*E*vâdere, to become, or to Profit, *Evadère.*

Lat.

Ital.

*A*rdère, to burn, *Ardere.*  
*F*olgere, to shine, *Fólgerè.*  
*L*ucère, to shine, *Lúcère.*  
*M*iscère, to mingle, or glister, *Míscère.*  
*M*ordère, to bite, *Mórdère.*  
*M*ulcère, to milk, *Múlcère.*  
*M*ovère, to move, or stir, *múovere*, and the compounds of the same,

*Nosér e,*

*Nocere*, to hurt, *Nuocere*.

*Pendere*, to hang, *Péndere*.

*Respondere*, to answer, *Respondere*.

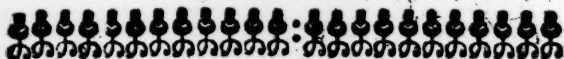
*Ridere* to laugh, *Ridere*.

*Tondere*, to shear, *Tondere*.

*Urgeré*, to urge, *Urgeré*.



THE



THE  
MANNER  
OF  
FORMING  
OF  
VERBS.

Useful for

GRAMMARIANS.

1. **T**He present tense of the indicative mood, is formed of the infinitive, by changing the three last letters into (o) as, *cantáre*, to sing; *cángo*, I sing.

2. The preterimperfect tense is formed from the infinitive also, by changing the two last letters into *va*; as, *cantáre*, to sing, *cantáva*, I did sing, or was singing.

3. The

3. The single preterperfect tense is formed also of the infinitive, by changing in the first conjugation *are* into *ai*; in the second, *ere* into *ei*; in the third, the two last syllables into *si*, or *ssi*: in the fourth, *ire* into *ii*, as, *cantāre*, to sing; *cantāi*, I sang; *godēre*, to enjoy; *godēi*, I enjoyed; *perdere*, to loose; *persi*, I lost; or *scrivere*, to write; *scrissi*, I wrote; *sentire*, to hear; *sentii*, I heard &c.

4. The future is also formed of the infinitive, by changing *re* into *rò*; as *cantāre*, to sing; *canterrò*, I shall or will sing; *godere*, to enjoy; *goderrò*, I shall or will enjoy; *perdere*, to loose; *perderò*, I shall or will loose; *sentire*, to hear; *sentirò*, I shall or will hear. Observe by the way, that in the first conjugation in the future of the indicative and second preterimperfect tense of the subjunctive mood, *a* is elegantly turned into (*e*) saying, *canterrò*, I shall sing; rather than *cantarò*, *canterei*, I should sing; rather than *cantares*.

5. The imperative is form'd of the first person of the present tense of the indicative, by changing (*a*) into (*a*) in the first conjugation; as; *canto*, I sing; *canta*, sing thou; but in the other three, the imperative is the same with the second person of the present tense; as, *godi*, enjoy thou; *scrivi*, write thou; *sentì*, hear thou; The third person of the imperative in the first conjugation, is the same with the second person of the present tense of the indicative mood of the same conjugation; as, *canti*, thou singest; *canti*, sing he: in the other three conjugations, the third person is formed from the

T

first

first person of the present tense of the indicative mood, by changing (o) into (a) as, *godo*, I enjoy; *goda*, enjoy he; *pérdo*, I loose; *pérda*, loose he; *sénto*, I hear; *sénta*, hear he: And in the third person plural of the first conjugation, *áo* is turned into *ino*; as, *cántano*, they sing; *cántino*, sing they: in the other three conjugations, *óuo* is turned into *áo*, *gódonó*, they enjoy; *gódainó*, enjoy they; *pérdonó*, they loose; *pérdainó*, loose they; *séntonó*, they hear; *séntainó*, hear they.

6. The present of the subjunctive or optative mood, is the same with the third person singular of the imperative, in the several conjugations, onely the signs being added; as, *ô che 'Io cánti*, O that I sing, or God grant I sing; *ô che 'Io góda*, O that I enjoy, or God grant I enjoy; *ô che 'Io scríva*, God grant I write; *ô che 'Io senta*, God grant I hear: and so throughout the tense to the last person.

6. The first preterimperfect tense of the subjunctive mood is formed of the second person singular of the single or uncompounded preterperfect tense of the indicative mood, changing *sti* into *ssi*; as, *cantásti*, thou sangst; *cantástsi*, should I sing, or if I sang; *godésti*, thou enjoyedst; *godéssi*, should I enjoy, or if I enjoyed; *perdesti*, thou loosedst; *perdeísi*, should I loose, or if I did loose; *sentísti*, thou heardst; *sentíssi*, should I hear, or if I should hear.



7. The second preterimperfect tense of the subjunctive mood is formed of the future of the indicative, by changing *rò* into *rèi*, or *ria*, in all the four conjugations; as, *canterò*, I shall sing; *canterèi*, or *cantería*, I should sing; *goderò*, I shall enjoy; *goderèi*, or *godería*, I should enjoy; *perderò*, I shall loose; *perderèi*, or *perdería*, I should loose; *sentirò*, I shall hear; *sentirèi*, or *sentiría*, I should hear.

9. The gerund, or also the active participle, as one may call it, is formed of the infinitive present, by changing in the first three conjugations, *re* into *ndo*, or *nte*; as, *cantare*, to sing; *cantando*; *cantante*, singing; *godere*, to enjoy; *godendo*, *godente*, enjoying; *perdere*, to loose; *perdendo*, *perdente*, loosing; but in the fourth conjugation, by changing *re* into *endo* or *ente*, and casting away the (*i*) as, *sentire*, to hear; *sentendo*, not *sentiendo* hearing, though in the participle the (*i*) may be kept, saying, *sentiente*, not *senténte*.

10. The passive participle is also formed of the present of the infinitive, by changing *re* into *to*; *cantare*, to sing; *cantato*, sung; *sentire*, to hear, *sentito*, heard. The rule is not general, only in the first and fourth conjugation; in the second and third, the participle varies very much; therefore look in the irregulars of those conjugations, some begin to form the verbs from the present of the indicative; as be-

ing more after the Latines : But this way by practice, seems to be the easier, for as much as the infinitives, in Dictionaries, are more obvious to a strangers eye, than the first person of the indicative : but all is one upon the matter,

---

---

THE

oice,  
tives,  
eye,  
one



THE  
T A B L E  
OF  
P A R T I C L E S;

Set forth in

E X A M P L E S.

HE

*Mi.*

**M** *I battè: battèmmi,*  
He stroke me.  
*Mi diède: dièdemi.*  
He gave me.

*Ti.*

*Ti battè: battètti.*  
He stroke thee.  
*Ti diède: dièdeti.*  
He gave thee, or to thee

Si:

*Si uccise:uccise si.*

He kill'd himself.

*Si a.ede la morte,**Diede la morte,*

He procured to himself his own death; or made himself away.

Ci:

*Ci percosse:percossesi.*

He stroke us.

*Ci diede: diedeci.*

He gave unto us.

*Ci fu:fuoci.*

There he hath been.

*Ci andò: andóci.*

There he went.

Ne:

*Ne abbracciò:abbracciòne.*

He embrac'd us.

*Ne diede:diédene.*

He gave unto us.

Vi.

*Vi percosse:percossesi.*

He stroke you.

*Vi diede:diédevi.*

He gave to you.

*Vi fù fúvvi.*

There he hath been, or was.

*Vi andò: andóvvi.*

There he went.

*Mi ti.*

*Mi ti raccomandando: raecomándomiti.*

I recomend me to you.

*Tù mi: ti raccomandásti raccomandástimiti.*

Thou recomendst thy self unto me.

*Mi si.*

*'Mi si eléffe per amico: eléffemsi per amico.*

He chose me for his friend.

*Egli mi si raccomandò: racommandómmissi.*

He recomended himself unto me.

*Mi ci.*

*Mi ci fermái due giórni: fermáimici.*

I staid there two days.

*Mi ci dé de un libro: dié demici.*

There he gave me a book.

*Mi vi.*

*Mi vi raccomandando raccomandómivi.*

I recomend me to ye.

*Mi vi vestí: vestimmi vi.*

There he clad me.

*Mi vi compró un giardíno: comprómivi.*

There he bought me a garden,

*Ti ci*

Ti c.

Dio ti di di de per pàdre,  
 Di edetici Dio per pàdre.  
 God gave thee to us for a father.  
 Io ti ci viddi: vidditi.  
 I saw thee there.

Ti si.

Dio ti si el esse per figliuolo: el essetisi.  
 God chose thee to him for his childe.  
 'Egli ti si raccomandà: raccomandatisi.  
 He commends him to you.

Ci si.

Egli ci si offerse: offerseci.  
 He offered himself to us.  
 Ci si prese per compagni: preseci.  
 He took us to him for companions.  
 Ci si uccise: ucciseci.  
 He kill'd himself there.

Vi si.

Vi si raccomandà: raccomandavisi.  
 He comends him to ye.  
 Dio vi si el esse: el essetisi Dio.  
 God chose ye to him.  
 Vi si uccise uccisevi.  
 He kill'd himself there.

to the Italian tongue]

179

*Vi si lasciò condurre: lasciòvvi si condurre]*  
He suffered himself to be led thicher.  
*Vi si comprò una vigna: compròvvi si, &c.*  
He bought himself a vineyard there.

*Vi ci.*

*Dio vi ci diè de per compàgni.*  
*Diè de vici Dio, &c.*  
God gave ye to us for companions.  
*Vi ci batterono: batteronvici.*  
There they stroke ye.  
*Vi ci menarono: menaronvici.*  
There they led ye.  
*Vi ci compràste una càsa: compràste vici: una càsa.*  
There ye bought ye a house.

*Me ne.*

*Me ne parlàsti: parlàstimenè.*  
You spake to me of him.  
*Though this may refer to any other person, thing;  
or things.*  
*Me ne scacciò: scacciòmmene.*  
He expell'd me hence, or thence.  
*Me ne vò: vòmmene.*  
I go me hence, or thence.

*Ten*

*Te ne.*

*Io te ne parlai: parlaitene.*  
 I spake to you of him, her, them.  
*Te ne scaccio: scacc'ottene.*  
 He expell'd thee hence or thence.  
*Tu te ne paristi: paristitene.*  
 Thou wentst from hence or thence.

*Se ne.*

*Se ne promise gran cōsa, promisesene gran cōsa.*  
 He promised himself great matters of him. her, them,  
 or that.  
*Se ne partì: partissene.*  
 He parted hence.

*Ve ne.*

*'Egli ve ne parlò: parlòvvene.*  
 He spake to you of him, her, them, it.  
*Voi ve ne andaste: andastevene.*  
 Ye went hence or thence.

*Ce ne.*

*'Egli ce ne parlò: parlòceene.*  
 He spake to us of him, her, them, it.  
*Noi ce ne partimmo: partimmoceene.*  
 We parted hence or thence.



**Gli mi & me gli.**

*Gli mi raccomandò: raccomandò gli mi.*  
*Me gli raccomandò: raccomandò mi gli.*  
 He recommended them to me.  
*Me gli raccomandai: raccomandai me gli.*  
*Gli mi raccomandai: raccomandai gli mi.*  
 I recommended me to him.

**Gli ti & te gli.**

*Gli ti raccomandai: raccomandai ti gli.*  
 I recommended thee to him.  
*Te gli raccomandai: raccomandai te gli.*  
 I recommended them to you.

**Gli se & se gli.**

*Gli si fece amici: fece gli si amici.*  
*Se gli fece amici: fece se gli amici.*  
 He made them his friends.  
*Se gli raccomandò: raccomandò se gli.*  
*Gli si raccomandò: raccomandò gli si.*  
 He recommended himself to him.

## Gli vi &amp; vegli.

*Ve gli raccomandái: raccomandái vegli.*

*Gli vi raccomandái: raccomandái gli vi.*

*I recommended them to you.*

*Ve gli raccomandáste: raccomandáste vegli.*

*Gli vi raccomandáste: raccomandáste gli vi.*

*Ye recommended your selves to him.*

*Gli vi viddi: viddi gli vi.*

*Ve gli viddi: viddi gli.*

*I saw them there.*

*Ve gli condússi: condússi vegli.*

*Gli vi condússe: condússe gli vi.*

*I led them there.*

## Gli ci &amp; ce gli.

*Gli ci raccomandásti: raccomandásti gli ci.*

*Ce gli raccomandásti: raccomandásti ce gli.*

*You comended them to us.*

*Gli ci viddi: viddi gli ci.*

*Ce gli viddi: viddi ce gli.*

*There I saw them.*

*Ce gli condússi: condússi ce gli.*

*Gli ci condússi: condússi gli ci.*

*There I led them.*

*Gli ci diédi la máncia: diédi gli ci.*

*Ce gli diédi la máncia: diédi ce gli.*

*There I gave him a new-years gift, or drinking-money.*

*Lo mi & me lo.*

*Me lo raccomandò: raccomandòmmelo.*

*Lo mi raccomandò: raccomandòllomi.*

He recommended him to me.

*Lo ti & te lo.*

*Io lo ti raccomando: raccomandòloti.*

*Te lo raccomando raccomandòtelo.*

I commend him to you.

*Lo si & se lo.*

*Lo si elèsse per compagno: elèsselo si per compagno.*

*Se lo elèsse per compagno: elèsselo per compagno.*

He chose him for his companion.

*Lo vi & ve lo.*

*Lo vi raccomandai: raccomandaiilovi.*

*Ve lo raccomandai: raccomandaiivelo.*

I comended him to you.

*Lo vi viddi: viddilovi.*

*Ve lo viddi: viddiivelo.*

There I saw him.

*Lo ci & ce lo.*

*Lo ci raccomandò: raccomandò loci.*  
*Ce lo raccomandò: raccomandò ccelo.*  
 He commended him unto us.

*Lo ne & ne lo.*

*Lo ne tòlse: tòlse nelo.*  
*Ne lo tòlse: tòlse lone.*  
 He took him from us.  
*Lo ne menò: menò llone.*  
*Ne lo menò: menò nnelo.*  
 He took him from hence.

*Lo ci & ce lo.*

*Lo ci viddi: viddi loci.*  
*Ce lo viddi: viddi celo.]*  
 There I saw him.  
*Lo ci menai: menai loci.*  
*Ce lo menai: menai celo.*  
 I led him there.

*La mi & me la.*

*La mi raccomandasti: raccomandasti la mi.*  
*Me la raccomandasti: raccomandasti me la.*  
 You comended her to me.

*La ti & te la.*

*La ti raccomandái: raccomandáiilati.*  
*Te la raccomandái: raccomandáiitela.*  
 I recommended her to you.

*La si & se la.*

*La si prese per móglie: présala si per móglie.*  
*Se la prese per móglie: présela si per móglie.*  
 He took her for his wife.

*La ci & ce la.*

*La ci raccomandò: raccomandòocela.*  
*Ce la raccomandò: raccomandòollaci.*  
 He commended her to us.  
*La ci vidd: viddilaci.*  
*Ce la viddi: viddilicela.*  
 I saw her there.  
*La ci menai: menailaci.*  
*Ce la menai: menaicela.*  
 I led her there.

## La vi &amp; ve la.

La vi raccomandando: raccomandolavi.  
 Ve la raccomandando: raccomandovela.

I commend her to you.

La vi viddi: viddilavi.

Ve la viddi: viddivela.

I saw her there.

La vi menai: menailavi.

Ve la menai: menaivela.

## La ne &amp; ne la.

La ne raccomandò: raccomandollane.

Ne la raccomandò: raccomandónnela.

He commended her to us.

La ne menò: menóllane.

Ne la menò: menónnela.

He took her away hence.

## Le mi &amp; me le.

Le mi raccomandò: raccomandóllemi.

Me le raccomandò: raccomandómmele.

He commended them to me.

*Le ti, & te le.*

*Le ti raccomandò, raccomandòllet.*  
*Te le raccomandò, raccomandòttele.*  
 He commended them to you.

*Le si, & se le.*

*Le si prese per compagne, presele si per compagne.*  
*Se le prese per compagne, prese se le per compagne.*  
 He or she took them for companions.

*Le ne, & ne le.*

*Le ne raccomandò, raccomandòllene.*  
*Ne le raccomandò, raccomandònnele.*  
 He comended them to us.  
*Le ne menò, menòllene.*  
*Ne le menò, menònnele.*  
 He took them hence.

*Le ci & ce le.*

*Le ci raccomandò, raccomandòllec.*  
*Ce le raccomandò, raccomandòccele.*  
 He commended them to us.  
*Le ci viddi, vidd'le ci.*  
*Ce le viddi, vidd'cele.*  
 I saw them there.  
*Le ci menai, menai le ci.*  
*Ce le menai, menai cele.*  
 I led them there.

*Le ci diédi la mância, diédileci la mância.*

*Cele diédi la mância, diédicele la mância.*

There J gave him a new-years gift, or drinking money.

*Le vi & ve le.*

*Ve le raccomando, raccomando ve le.*

*Le vi raccomando, raccomando ve le.*

J comend them to ye.

*Le viddi, viddilevi.*

*Ve le viddi viddi ve le.*

There J saw them.

*Le vi menai, menai levi.*

*Ve le menai, menai ve le.*

There I led them.

---

What





What the Figures signifie, which  
are prefixt to the verbs all along,  
and the use of the most re-  
markable tenses.

1. **T**HE present tense of the Indicative mood.

2. The preterimperfect tense of the same mood, where note, that in the three last conjugations in the third persons singular, and plural, the (*u*) may be omitted; *godéa*, for *godéva*, he did enjoy; *perdéa*, for *perdéva*, he did lose; *sentia*, for *sentiva*, he did hear; *godéano*, for *godévano*; *perdéano*, for *perdévano*; *sentiano* for *sentivano*, they did enjoy, they did lose, did hear, &c. And in all the conjugations, this tense is us'd, when one would express the continuing of any action, not the compleatness of the same, as the very word *imperfect* intimateth; as, *Io cantávi*, I was singing; *godéva*, was enjoying; *perdéva*, was losing; *sentiva*, was hearing: most Strangers mistake this tense for the single preterfect tense.

3. The compound preterperfect tense; *viz.* made of the present tense of one of the two auxiliar verbs, *hò*, I have; or, *sono*, I am, and the participle of some other verb; as, *Io hò cominciato*, I have gone; *son rimasto*, I have remained, or staid: we use this tense, when we intend to express a time past, but ever within the compass of the same day; or else without setting any time, meaning it to have been done a long time ago; *Oggi hò scritto a Napoli*, today I have written to Naples; not

*scrissi* : Il mio Parente è morto in Italia, my kindfman dyed in Italy, not mori.

4. The single preterperfect tense of the same mood : we use this tense, when we mean to express a certain time past, but never the same day the action is done ; and besides, generally there is an adverb of time prefixt ; *hiéri scrissi lettere per Livórno*, yesterday J wrote lettes for Legorn ; not *hiéri hò scríto lettere*, &c. nor *hóggi scrissi lettere*, &c. *l'anno sánto égli fù a Róma*, the holy year he was at Rome, not *égli è státo a Róma*.

5. The first preterpluperfect tense of the same mood.

6. The second preterpluperfect tense of the same mood : we use either of these, when we mean to express a time past long ago, and most commonly confind with *quándo*, when, *póiche*, after that, *guári*, long, *alhóra*, then ; as, *póiche hébbe havúto Adámo da Dio il pre-cétto*, &c. after that Adam had had the command from God, &c. but the use of this tense is not very frequent.

7. The future tense of the same mood ; whose termination is the same in all verbs, whatsoever ; *rò, rái, rá, rémo réte, ráno*.

8. The present tense of the Imperative mood, the su ure tense, beginning the same with that of the Indicative i s not exprest.

9. The present tense of the subjunctive, or optative mood ; there being no difference in either, but onely so far as the signs, *che*, that ; *ò che*, O that ; *quándo che*, when as that ; *bénche*, although that, and the like, distinguish the moods.

10. The first preterimperfect tense of the same mood ; and generally some sign precedes the same specially ; *se*, if : as, *se égli havésse il módo, si farébbe valére*, if he had means he would set himself forth.

11. The same preterimperfect tense, but without any sign  
The

explicitely, but tacitely, and with the pronoun after it.

12. The second preterimperfect tense, which hath no conditional sign to it, but usually follows the first preterperfect tense; as, in the example, *se egli havèsse il módo egli si farebbe valere*; not, *se egli haurèbbe il módo egli si facesse valere*, the placing of the phrases is not material; for we as well say, *si farebbe valere se egli havèsse il módo*: another example, *parlerei, spesso se sa; essi ben la pronóntia*, I would or should speak often, if I had the pronunciation right; and note, that the termination of this tense is regular in all verbs, *rei, restirebbe, or riarèmmo, or ressimio, reste, rebbono, rèbbero, or riano*, which imply, would, should, or could.

13. The preterperfect tense of the subjunctive mood or optative.

14. The first preterpluperfect tense of the subjunctive, or optative mood.

15. The second preterpluperfect tense of the subjunctive or optative, either of them being distinguished by the signs, as hath been already hinted at number 10. note, that these two preterpluperfect tenses, ever seem to gingle one with another; as, *se non fosse venuto il medico, il poveraccio sarebbe morto*, if the Physician had not come, the poor wretch had dyed: the same may be expressed elegantly by a shorter cut; namely, putting both the tenses into the preterimperfect tense of the indicative mood, and the conditional particle *se*; as, *se non veniva il medico, il poveraccio moriva*, being the same in signification as *se non fosse venuto, &c.*

16. The future tense of the subjunctive or optative moods, which is also elegantly supplied, if any please, by leaving out *quando*, and putting *che* after the participle; as, *quando havró sentito, when I shall have heard, semito che havrò*

17. The infinitive mood present, which also elegantly expresseth the present of the indicative, *ecco venire il Signor Cavagliér Paulo*, or, *ecco che viène il Signór Cavagliér Paolo*, behold, or see Sir Paul cometh, and narratively, as Historians do, the infinitive signifies sometimes the present tense, sometimes the preterimperfect tense, and preterperfect tense of the indicative mood, especially upon the Heads, or Contents of Chapters, *i Signor Cardinali vestirsi, ò di róssò ò di pavonáz zo secondo che pórtà la giornáta*, the Cardinals cloathe in red or purple, according as the day beareth.

18. The future of the infinitive, equivalent to the Latine future in rus, *havér ad amáre*, about to love, *amaturus*, &c.

19. The Gerund, which is not so frequent, but is circumscrib'd with a preposition, and the infinitive, *nel móire*, in the dying, or *moréndo*.

20. The participle, which is in the first and fourth conjugations, is regular, ending generally in *áto* or *íto*, (some onely excepted) the other of the second and third, are so ambiguous, that set rules cannot be gathered, as may satisfie, without implication or confusion; as, from *rimanére*, to remain; *rimásto*, remained; from *scrivere*, to write, *scritto*, written: I mean, but by strict Grammarians, whom I refer to such Grammars as interpret by the Latine.

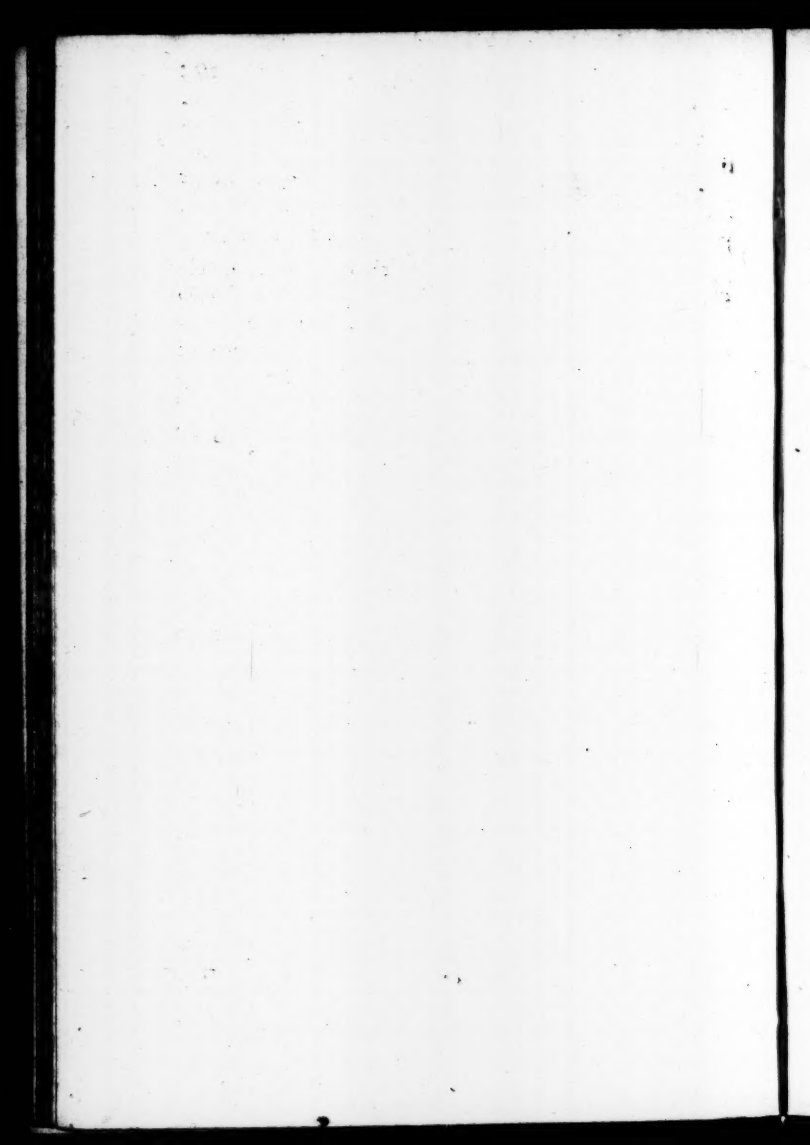
21. The preterperfect tense of the infinitive mood, which is often used elegantly, by putting the article *il* or *lo* and reduced into a substantive, so as that the whole phrase is substantively; *L' havér imparáto le sciénze rende men rózzz li costúmi*, to have learned, or the learning of the Arts sweetens behaviour; as in the

the Latine, *didicisse fideliter Artes, emollit mores, &c.*

22. A kinde of preterpluperfect tense of the infinitive mood.

23. Another future used by the circumlocution of the auxiliar gerunds, *havendo, essendo, and dovendo*. The English will direct how every tense may be us'd, being rightly set down, though not specified in mood and tense so strictly as *Florio* doth, every ones mother tongue being the main *vehiculum* for matter of application; it being the like if an Italian were about to learn English, who finding answerable to *sarà* should be, upon occasion he would not say, shall be, in as much as shall be, he may finde answerable to *sarà*.

---





# THE TABLE

**T**HE manner of pronouncing the Alphabet, as to the single letters.

The pronounciation of the Letters, as to composition, page 1

The examples of the Rules of Pronounciation by themselves, 7

When E and O not pronounc'd, nor exprest, 8

What words end in consonants, ib.

What words are never abbreviated, 9

When the particles la, le, lo, di, mi, ti, si, ci, ne, vi, are contracted, ib.

The most usual abbreviations, and contractions, 10

Other contractions of a different nature 12

What words are obsolete, and what in use as to Orthography, 13

General Rules for accents, 15

What words ought always to have accents over them, 17

Observations of Vowels, how they joyn, and sever, 19

How in, con, per, non, come to adde (i) to words following them, 20

The Articles both finite, and indefinite, 21

The terminations of Nouns substantives or adjectives, 25  
Nouns

# *The Table.*

<i>Nouns which have a double plural,</i>	28
<i>Dignities and Titles of persons,</i>	32
<i>A Scale how to make Nouns signifie more or less.</i>	33
<i>The degrees of Comparison,</i>	37
<i>The derivation of names from their Countreys,</i>	41
<i>The numbers,</i>	41
<i>The days of the week,</i>	46
<i>The season of the year,</i>	ib.
1. <i>Pronouns personal,</i>	47
2. <i>Pronouns possessive</i>	49
3. <i>Pronouns demonstrative,</i>	53
4. <i>Pronouns relative,</i>	58
5. <i>Pronouns indefinite, and interrogative,</i>	61
6. <i>Pronouns indefinite,</i>	63
7. <i>Pronoun particles,</i>	67
<i>The Auxiliar verb 'Essere, to be,</i>	69
<i>The Auxiliar verb 'Havere, to have,</i>	75
<i>The verb Amare, of the first Conjugation,</i>	82
<i>The verb Godere, of the second Conjugation, 89. and     the verb Cadere of the same Conjugation,</i>	94
<i>The verb Perdere of the third Conjugation,</i>	98
<i>The verb Sentire of the fourth Conjugation,</i>	103
<i>The irregular verbs of the first Conjugation,</i>	108
<i>The irregulars of the second Conjugation,</i>	122
<i>The irregulars of the third Conjugation,</i>	141
<i>The irregulars of the fourth Conjugation,</i>	153
<i>In what Moods, and Tenses some Verbs are contracted     of all the Conjugations.</i>	185
<i>Of the verb Passive,</i>	187
<i>Verbs Newters conjugated by the verb Havere,</i>	188
<i>Verbs Newters conjugated by the verb Essere,</i>	189
<i>Verbs reciprocal,</i>	ib.
<i>Verbs reciprocal with particles,</i>	190
<i>Verbs impersonal without particles,</i>	ib. what



# The Table.

What Verbs are used impersonally,	191
The passivation of the third persons singular, and plural of Verbs,	193
When the Verb 'Essere is us'd impersonal,	197
The contracted Participles of the first Conjugation,	198
1. Adverbs of affirming,	200
2. Of Augmenting,	ib.
3. Of Calling,	201
4. Of Comparing	ib.
5. Of Chusing,	ib.
6. Of Demonstrating,	202
7. Of Denying,	ib.
8. Of Doubting,	203
9. Of Exhorting,	ib.
10. Of Excepting,	ib.
11. Of Forbidding,	204
12. Of Interrogation,	205
13. Of Lessening,	205
14. Number,	206
15. Of Order or Sequence,	207
16. Of Place,	ib.
17. Of Posture	210
18. Of Quality,	ib.
19. Of Quantity,	212
20. Of Similitude,	213
21. Of Separation,	ib.
22. Of Swearing,	214
23. Of time,	215
24. Of Wishing,	218
25. Of Imprecation,	ib.
1. Conjunctions of Addition,	220
2. Of Cause,	ib.
3. Of Concluding.	221
4. Of Comparing,	ib.

# The Table.

5. Of Condition,	222
6. Of Continuation and Consequence,	223
7. Of Disjoyning,	ib.
8. Of Chusing,	224
9. Of Excepting,	ib.
Prepositions, with their several applications,	225
Prepositions unseparable,	227
Di, A, Da, Prepositions implying motion,	228
Interjections of several passions,	229
Observations on the finite Articles,	231
A. All, &c. with verbs of Privation, what they signify,	234
Da, Dal, &c. with Verbs of motion, what they signify,	ib.
Da, Dal, when Adverbs of exception,	ib.
Da, with Verbs of Number,	235
The Pronoun possessive preceding the Substantive,	ib.
When the finite Article is tacitely implied,	ib.
The concordance of Nouns, Pronouns and Participles in gender, number and case,	236
Di, us'd in an ablative sense,	ib.
Del, Dello, &c. us'd in the sense of (for)	ib.
Da, before Infinitives,	237
Proper names have no finite article,	ib.
The Substantive precedes the Adjective,	238
The finite Article before Adjectives,	ib.
Adjectives in te, ro, re, make Adverbs of quality,	239
Names of trees of the Masculine Gender,	ib.
How Adjectives are made of Substantives,	ib.
Substantives made of Participles,	240
How names of Professors, and Artificers are fram'd,	240, 241
1. How words may be fram'd to signify capacity, fulness, worth, power, &c.	ib.
2. Adg	

# *The Table.*

5.	<i>Adverbs of similitude, made by Alla, and Da,</i>	242
	<i>When me, te, lui, are rather us' d ihan Io, tu, egli,</i>	ib.
	<i>When the Conjunctive Pronouns are incorporated with</i>	
	<i>Verb, Gerund, or Participle, and when not,</i>	243
	<i>The Pronoun Personal tacitely understood, as by the La-</i>	
	<i>tines,</i>	ib.
	<i>The Particles assuming the nature of Pronouns,</i>	243
	<i>Pronouns possessive, implying goods or wealth,</i>	244
	<i>The finite Article preceding Pronouns possessive,</i>	ib.
	<i>Negatives deny most,</i>	245
	<i>Observations upon Ne,</i>	ib.
	<i>Observations upon Si,</i>	246
	<i>Expletive Particles,</i>	247
	<i>Observations on gliela, gliene, &amp;c.</i>	ib.
	<i>Of di and da, relating to places,</i>	248
	<i>What Verbs require A or Ad, rather than di,</i>	ib.
	<i>Infinitives made Substantives by the Article,</i>	249
	<i>When che comes with the Indicative, when with the</i>	
	<i>Subjunctive mood,</i>	ib.
	<i>Verbs generally have after them A, Ad, or di, or che,</i>	250
	<i>Per, with an Infinitive, implying causality,</i>	ib.
	<i>The Present Tense of the Subjunctive mood, answering</i>	
	<i>to the Present of the Indicative mood, &amp;c.</i>	251
	<i>The Infinitives of Verbs, and Substantives, may lose</i>	
	<i>their last vowel,</i>	ib.
	<i>What Verbs are not exprest with di,</i>	252
	<i>The Particle si, elegantly put before the Auxiliar Verb,</i>	
		ib.
	<i>Posso and voglio, accompanied with reciprocals,</i>	253
	<i>The use of the Neuters actives, and Neuters passive,</i>	
	<i>as they may be termed,</i>	ib.
	<i>The Verb Fare, signifying to play, or act,</i>	254
	<i>Verbs of giving or taking away what cases they govern,</i>	ib.
	<i>The</i>	

## The Table.

<i>The nature of Havère, Toccàre, Pizzicàre, Sapère, with the finite Article, and the Genitive Case,</i>	255
<i>Question, and Answer in the same Tenses,</i>	ib.
<i>The several ways of commanding, or intreating,</i>	ib.
<i>The several ways of forbidding, and dissuading,</i>	256
<i>The placing of non, betwixt di, and the pronoun Particle,</i>	ib.
<i>Gerunds, accompanied with stò, and vò,</i>	257
<i>The Pronoun after the Gerund,</i>	ib.
<i>Pronoun Particles come not immediately before the Gerund, &amp;c.</i>	ib.
<i>Essendo and Havendo, elegantly omitted, or tacitely understood,</i>	ib.
<i>The passive Participle elegantly us'd, with the conjunction che, and the futures havèrò and sarò,</i>	258
<i>When the passive Participle concurs with the Substantive, when not,</i>	259
<i>The active Participle us'd in the nature of a Substantive,</i>	260
<i>Gerunds of the nature of Noun-Adjectives,</i>	ib.
<i>In, with a Gerund, sometimes us'd,</i>	ib.
<i>The last vowel in verbs omitted, when si is affix't,</i>	261
<i>Pure, elegantly put immediately after Verbs,</i>	ib.
<i>How the Particles mi, ti, si, &amp;c. are placed,</i>	ib.
<i>Mi, ti, si, us'd rather than me, te, se,</i>	262
<i>Dichi for whose, in English,</i>	ib.
<i>Usual Questions, and Answers about distances of places,</i>	ib.
<i>Of quà and là, qui and sì, answering to huc and illuc, hic and illic of the Latines,</i>	263
<i>Che prefixt to Participles elegantly,</i>	ib.
<i>Che, when double, what it signifies,</i>	ib.
<i>The Preposition di, how us'd,</i>	264
<i>The</i>	<i>The</i>

# The Table.

<i>The Preposition in, how us'd,</i>	162
<i>When non or nò, is to be us'd,</i>	ib.
<i>Per, how us'd,</i>	265
<i>The Prepositions re ond ri, how us'd,</i>	266
<i>The Prepositions in, is, dis mis, s, and their nature.</i>	266.
<i>The Prepositions a, e, ò. before vowels, how ordered,</i>	267.
<i>A Series of words more immediately deriving from the Latine than the form exprest at the beginning of this Introduction,</i>	268
<i>A Series of Verbs, that cross Conjugations, both in the Italian and the Latine, necessary to be perus'd by Latine Scholars,</i>	270
<i>The manner of forming of Verbs,</i>	272
<i>The Table of Particles,</i>	275
<i>The explication of the Figures, which relate to the Verbs.</i>	

This Table may so direct a Latine, or Grammar Scholar throughout this Introduction, upon the matter, as well as if the terms of Grammar had been exprest all along in the same; and for their sakes, I have annext it unto the Introduction, which otherwise might have been omitted, and may be not mist,

**F I N I S.**